

All Grown Up by Saewod

Storyid: 5072865

FanFiction.net

Name: All Grown Up

Author: Saewod

Chapter 1 to 30

Bella is a geeky, awkward young teen when the Cullen's move in next door. Alice becomes her best friend; however Alice's much older brother does little much than think of her as a younger sister. Through the years Bella grows into herself and catches more attention than she wanted, but she also catches attention that she never imagined that she would get.

Don't expect meet and fall in love in the next day with my stories. It's not how I roll. I like a little more reality in there for my stories; though I do try to build that pull and that bonded attraction that they feel with each other

Unfortunately for me I do not own Twilight or the characters; however, I am the puppet master that makes them bend to my every command (insert evil laugh here).

Chapter 1 – High School the Beginning

I remember the day the Cullen's moved in to the house next door. I was fourteen years old when a tiny pixie girl showed up on our doorstep. I would have thought she was twelve for how small she was.

"Hello." I answered the door.

"Hi, I'm Alice. I just moved in next door." She beamed brightly in front of me. She was very small and thin with straight black hair past her shoulders. She had fair skin, dressed like a Barbie doll, and had gray eyes. She was adorable with her fine features.

"Alice, you could've waited for me" spoke a petite fair skin woman with caramel colored curly hair. She was curvy and reminded me of a 1950's screen actress. Her attention turned toward me "Hello dear, I'm Esme Cullen. We are your new neighbors. Are you parent's home?"

"Umm...hold on a second." I turned back into the house "MOM!!! There are people at the door!"

My mom came from the kitchen quickly; wiping her hands on a dish towel. "Yes?"

They introduced themselves again. "It's nice to meet the both of you. I'm Sue Swan and this is my daughter Bella."

“Step-daughter” I mumbled. I still hadn’t completely forgiven my dad for marrying Sue and moving her two children in with us. I mean, I knew she made him happy and Sue treated me like one of her own, but I was just used to it being me and Charlie since my mom left us.

Sue cleared her throat; I had clearly made her uncomfortable. “Please come in.” Alice bounced in and Esme seemed to gracefully glide in like she was walking on air. She was truly stunning.

Sue and Esme headed to the kitchen. Sue turned around to me “Why don’t you show Alice your room dear?”

I turned to Alice apprehensively. “You want to see my room?”

“Definitely!” she followed me up the stairs.

After we entered she walked around and then walked out onto my small balcony. “Oh my goodness!” She made me jump when she yelled. “Bella your room is straight across from mine! If that tree wasn’t in the way then we could basically see directly into each other’s rooms!”

“Really?” I knew I wasn’t being too friendly, but I also wasn’t exactly a very forward, outgoing person like Alice seemed to be. I knew once school started that most likely she would end up with the popular crowd and I would remain with my small click of friends which was labeled as the quiet geeky type.

“So what’s all this?” she turned to my desk where all of my computer hardware and software was.

“Umm...I like computers. A lot.” I bit my lip.

“I guess so.” She smiled at me. “Bella?”

“Yes Alice”

“I really like you. I think that we are going to be great friends.” She plopped down in front of my stereo and started going through my CDs . “Oh my god I love this song” she screamed as she put my ‘Prince Greatest Hits’ CD in and turned on ‘Kiss’; singing along.

From that moment forward we were best friends.

The weekend after meeting Alice and Esme all of our families became acquainted with each other. The Cullen’s had a barbeque to meet all of the neighbors. Charlie, Sue, Leah (my step-sister), Seth (my step-brother), and me arrived before everyone else so that we could help out with anything. Plus they lived right next door.

The Cullen’s house was one of the biggest on the block. It was definitely bigger than our four bedroom house. They had at least six bedrooms. Our house was beige with green trim theirs was

white with blue trim. The Cullens had a four car garage, we had a two car garage, and they had the pool. Not that you could use a pool too much in Forks; however, the Cullen's had a heater installed so that it was able to be used more.

Upon arrival we were greeted by Alice who almost tackled me in the entryway of the house, then Esme introduced us to her husband Dr. Carlisle Cullen. Sue introduced all of us before heading to help Esme in the kitchen; Leah followed. Dad and Carlisle headed to the barbeque to talk sports. Alice and I headed out to the back yard.

"Come on. You can meet my brother." She grabbed my hand and took me to the back yard at a faster pace. "He's older, seventeen actually, but he is pretty cool sometimes; when he's not going all over protective on me."

We stopped in front of the most gorgeous boy I had ever seen. He was tall and lean, but still muscular. His face was perfect as if angels had created it by hand and his hair. Oh god his hair was beyond hot; it was a unique reddish-brown almost bronze. It was wavy and seemed to be either perfectly unruly or styled to the best bed head hair I had ever seen; and those eyes, those emerald green eyes. I couldn't breathe; infatuation began immediately.

"Bella this is Edward, Edward this is Bella." She motioned between us.

All I could do was smile. "Hey Bella, nice to meet you" he smiled back. *Swoon!*

"Head's up!" I heard Seth's voice. I looked up to see a Frisbee heading for my head. I ducked quickly waiting for impact, but Edward had caught it.

"Thanks" I said as I felt color creep up into my cheeks.

Alice and I spent a lot of time talking under the tree that was between our houses; which would become known as our tree. It was also where, by the end of that summer, build a tree house that we could both access from our balconies; Esme and Sue had gotten quite tired of yelling at us for climbing that tree over to each other's rooms. When it started to get dark we went to her room to hang out. Leah joined us. Leah was alright. She could be a little stuck up and mean, but she was okay; she just thought that since she was a year older that she knew it all.

Alice and Leah were going through Alice's closet discussing fashion and what they were planning to buy for school this year. At least they had that in common, I wasn't a big fashion type of girl; I like my jeans and T-shirts thanks; this was the night that Alice would find out about my fashion sense and take her vow to teach me the ways of the shopper. *I'd rather be a Jedi.*

Let me take a moment to discuss my appearance. I was average; nothing special. I had fair skin, wavy mahogany colored hair that came to my waist, plain dark brown eyes, black rim glasses, and I was awkward and lanky. 'All knees and elbows' is what Charlie would say about me all the time. Compared to Leah, who was dark skinned, almost black hair, almond shaped hazel eyes, and curve after curve I was definitely the ugly step-sister. Now compared to Alice as well, I was

definitely taking a hit to my self confidence.

It was hard to believe how quickly the summer flew by. Alice, Leah, and I had spent the majority of the summer shopping –*ugh*, swimming, hanging out, and talking about boys. Well, Alice and Leah talked more about boys than I did; though they both could tell that I had a crush on Edward.

I did have a crush. I knew that nothing would ever come of it; after all I was going to be a freshman and Edward was going to be a senior. Not only that, but I was plain awkward Bella, best friend to Alice. It was just a crush. By the end of that summer he saw me as a little sister.

Right before freshman year began, Alice decided to have a party. Charlie and Sue were going out to dinner in Seattle with the Cullen's and Alice took their overnight trip to every advantage she could. I think that she invited every person under the age of nineteen. Then came her attempt to dress me for the party.

"Calm down Bella you look hot" I looked in her mirror and shrugged. Maybe if I had some curve to my body, but I had none; I was a stick figure in tight jeans and a halter top. Ugh!

Alice drug me around her house to 'mingle' with people. When we got to the game room that the Cullen's set up in the basement, Edward was sitting with a group of guys drinking and playing video games.

The semi circle around the large television consisted of Seth, Edward, James, Emmett, and Sam. There were all calling each other names and taking bets on who would kick whose ass. I was watching them all closely when I noticed Edward had turned to look at Alice and me. I smiled, blushed and turned my head.

"Did you want to play Bella?" Edward asked.

I was shaking my head no when I heard Emmett – the loud guy who lived down the street – speak up. "What? Yeah go ahead Cullen... a girl would play better than you?" He laughed boisterously and everyone but Seth joined. Seth knew better and he smirked.

Seth spoke quickly before I could leave the room. "You know what? I need to run to the bathroom. Bells, why don't you sit in for me until I get back?" He winked at me.

"You're going to let her take over your game dude? Are you crazy? We can wait for you." Seth shook his head. "Nah, it's alright." He answered Emmett.

I walked over and took the controller from Seth. "Your loss dude." Emmett finished.

Seth leaned and whispered to me "kick their asses Bella." He smiled large as he headed off. They were playing a game that we had at our house, but what these guys didn't know was that it was my game and that I was a video game fanatic along with my computers. *Yeah, I was a geek all the way around. Didn't matter how you looked at me.*

The cars were lined up and the race began. I sat cross legged in Seth's spot. I stayed back for the first lap paying attention to how they all played. Second lap started and I floored it! In the process I floored them all. On the final lap I had sent Emmett to wreckage, Edward was too damaged to keep up, James had given up, and Sam was two places behind me. I finished first, Sam third, and well the other didn't even matter.

I heard Seth laughing hard from behind the group. Everyone turned to him.

"You fucking knew that she would crush us?!" Emmett was astounded.

"Fuck yeah I did!" Seth pumped his fist in the air at me. I felt a boost of confidence that I hadn't felt all night; then Seth took it away unintentionally. "Don't underestimate my video geek sister!" He laughed at all of them. They all laughed.

I got up, sighing, handed Seth the controller back and went to find Alice.

"Hey Bella" I turned to that sweet velvety voice that I knew was Edward.

"Hmm?"

"Nice game." He smiled and turned back to his friends. My heart fluttered and I internally smiled the rest of the night.

My freshmen year went about the same except that Alice was still at my side. To say that I was shocked that she stayed around was an understatement. She was envied by most of the school because of her money, her fashion sense, her quick wit, and of course because they all worshipped Edward Cullen.

By association I had become less invisible to everyone. Alice had decided to take over the school newspaper and news station, which she pulled me in to. Typically a senior was the chief editor in charge of the paper, but Alice was determined. She was slightly disappointed when she was not able to get chief editor her freshmen year, but she was determined to have it by the end of sophomore year. I of course handled the technical and computer stuff.

Alice tried to pull me into cheerleading, but after one session of her trying to 'teach' me how to do a cheer for tryouts and she finally agreed to leave me alone about it. I instead joined a computer group after school, so while she had cheer practice I had meetings with my computer group.

Our freshmen year had gone by typically smooth for a freshmen year. Summer had come up quickly, and it was a lot of graduation parties; including Edwards. I remember that the night of his graduation party, after our mom's had shooed us away from the partying that Edward and his friends were beginning, Alice and I had crept out to our tree house to sleep. Okay well to spy on the party; we were young.

We saw Leah, she got to stay since she was sixteen though by the looks of things she wasn't

sticking to that no drinking rule that Sue gave her. Leah was flirting with Sam, who seemed to be entertained by her. Then I saw Edward. He was off from everyone else in a corner of the yard on a blanket with some blonde girl. Even though it had only been a crush, it still hurt me to see him. I knew it was the girl he had been seeing for about a month; Tanya.

Summer flew by quickly as they seem to do when you are younger. I remember Leah taking Alice and I to the LaPush Beach every sunny day she could; it was an excuse to see Sam. That was the summer I got to know Jacob Black. He was eight-teen like Edward and Seth, but he wasn't going away to college. Jake had decided to go to a local trade college for mechanics; it was the same college that Sam was going to.

That summer was also the summer that Leah got grounded repeatedly for sneaking out; obviously to see Sam, though she never confessed that to our parents. Sam was Leah's first love, her first everything.

Sophomore year of high school started off much like freshman year. Alice was the first sophomore girl to make varsity for cheer, I was head of the computer group as well as worked closely with my teacher with programming, troubleshooting, and other projects. I assisted in creating the school's new website and Alice pushed for the newspaper to use my computer knowledge to produce more efficient and interesting papers.

I have to admit that by the end of sophomore year I had started to come out of my shell a little more. I owed most of this to Alice and Leah. The final person to bring me out of myself was my cousin Rosalie. She had been living with Grandma Swan in Seattle; however, when grandma passed away she came to live with us. I had them move her into my room with me; it was big enough for both of us.

Rosalie was a year older and absolutely gorgeous. Rose was tall, fair skinned, had long blonde hair, bright blue eyes, and the body of a swimsuit model. The summer she arrived every boy in the town was using her as 'shower' material. However, Rose was independent and feisty. She loved the mechanics of things. She had hit it off with Jacob, though it was only through common interests nothing romantic. Even so, Alice and I teased her repeatedly about Jake.

Sophomore summer brought with it a little more chaos and trouble. Alice, Rose, and I were a force to be reckoned with and I thought that our parents were going to end up drowning us all in the Cullen's pool. We snuck out a lot, went to parties, and had gotten more interested in guys than previous summers. It was a summer of first kisses and first loves. My first kiss was with a boy from LaPush named Embry. Alice's was with a boy named Jared; both of them happening the same night at a beach fire. Rose was a little more experienced and it was her first night with a boy from LaPush; mainly that boy being Quil. After that night, Rose had a hard time shaking him off.

As with each year, the summer ended and it was time to prepare to return to school. We were going to be juniors. It was exciting. Alice had already secured her spot at the first junior to be head cheerleader and to be the editor of the school paper. Rose was a co-captain, along with Leah.

The biggest change for me though seemed to be just me. I changed so much that summer. I was more confident, I had grown into myself. I embraced my geek side, as well as the fact that Alice's past two years of fashion tips and makeovers had rubbed off a little.

On top of my personality, my physical appearance had changed; well it had actually arrived. I was no longer 'knees and elbows'. I was now about 5'7" with a lean but curvy body.

Alice had also brought to my attention my figure changes. I stepped out of her house in my bathing suite to jump in the pool with her when she stood in front of me just staring and then yelled for Rose and Leah. "Bella, when did you get to be such a hottie?" Alice smirked. I pushed her into the pool.

It was also one of our final trips to LaPush Beach that had been my final realization of these changes. It was the first time that guys actually checked me out when I walked passed them. I didn't know what to do and I was ridiculously self-conscious about them staring.

I wasn't sure what junior and senior year would hold for all of us.

#####

Chapter: 2

Chapter 2 – High School the End

Junior year was different than previous years. Alice, Rose, Leah, and I seemed to be the more popular girls now. It was weird, because we were all still the same overbearing pixie, hardheaded hottie, stubborn smart girl, and the geek; some how we still ended up being 'popular' to an extent.

Junior year was also the year that I learned to really, really hate guys and to really like one. I could not get Mike Newton and Eric Yorkie to back off of me. Every Friday was the same thing; I would have to turn down all three of them for whatever date they tried to plan with me. However, it was also the year that Tyler Crowley moved to Forks and started going to school here. Tyler and I seemed to instantly hit it off as friends, then about a month after he had moved here we were dating. Tyler was great. He was my first real boyfriend and my first physical relationship. It also helped that with Tyler, Mike and Eric backed off.

Half way into my junior year Leah found out she was pregnant; obviously to Sam. Sam had proposed marriage to her; however, Charlie and Sue would have none of that. Leah was eighteen and angry, so she vowed that when she graduated she was moving out to live with Sam. Sam wasn't a bad guy; at least he had a job as a mechanic and was right there to stand by Leah. Seth

almost came back from college to kill Sam, but Charlie and Sue had calmed him down. After this situation, my curfew became stricter, and with the chief of police as your father you had really no other choice but to comply.

I think that Leah would be the big event of my seventeenth year of life.

“Bella!” Alice’s yell pulled me out of my thoughts. I closed my online journal and headed to my balcony.

“What?!” I yelled back. Alice came walking across the tree house walkway toward my balcony with two different outfits held up.

“Which one do you like best?” She rotated the dresses in front of her. Alice had cut off all her hair at the beginning of the year; she now had short choppy spiked and flipped hair. If she combed it out straight it would probably be chin length.

“Umm...the gray one” I pointed and turned to head back into my room. Charlie had to reinforce the tree house as we got older. Alice and I refused to let them tear it down; it was our quick and easy passage to each other. It also came in handy for sneaking out; hence Leah’s current six month condition.

“Are you sure? You don’t think that the pink one is more me?” I headed back to the doors.

“If you are not going to listen to me, then why do you ask me?” I cocked my head to one side. My phone rang. I took it out of my pocket and smiled. “It’s Tyler.” I smiled to Alice. She waved to me as she headed back over to her house.

“Hey Ty”

“Hey Bella, are you guys still coming tonight?” Tonight was one of the first beach fires since winter had passed and everyone from school was trying to get to it.

“Yep, I even got Charlie to extend my curfew.”

“How did you do that?” he questioned.

“Begged, pleaded, and swore in my own blood that I wouldn’t come home knocked up.” He laughed.

“Cool. So when are you guys planning on showing up?”

“Hmm...I’m not sure. You know Alice will try to force a makeover on me, so I’ll text you when we are getting close to leaving, okay?”

“Sounds good, and Bells don’t let her make you over too much, I like you the way you are.”
Aww swoon. He was so sweet sometimes.

“Thanks Ty. See you later.”

“Later”

Alice showed up completely dressed and ready for the party carrying an outfit over her arm; which I knew would be for me. Rose was also ready to go. Looking at the both of them made me want to just stay home and not even bother trying. *Thank god I already had Tyler.*

Alice had on a tight gray tube dress with black leggings on underneath with black flip flops. Rose was in a tight red tank top and dark blue skinny jeans with red sandals. They both had perfect hair and makeup; why do they even bother with me? Ugh.

“Come on Bella. Get this on.” Alice threw something dark blue and something khaki at me.

“What is this?” I asked shocked.

Alice huffed. “What’s wrong with this outfit? I thought you would be ecstatic that I picked out a casual outfit for you?”

“No, no, Alice I am shocked. You mean I get to wear a blue tank top and wide leg khaki’s? Seriously?” I pretended to faint onto my bed.

“Well, you still have hair and makeup that we need to do, so hurry up smartass!” Alice spat out at me while Rosalie laughed at both of our exchanges.

I quickly changed. The top was a little tight, but hey I got to wear comfy clothes. I wasn’t going to complain. Alice curled my hair so that soft waves flowed down my back and gave me light makeup to enhance my eye color and shape. It was truly magic what she could transform me into.

She threw me a dark blue hoodie and a dark blue and khaki plaid page boy cap along with blue flip flops before we all darted out the door and jumped into Alice’s car. Alice had asked for a yellow Porsche; she got a yellow Volts Wagon Bug convertible. It was more than either Rose or I had, so we told Alice to just be happy. It was the end of May so Alice put the top down, just because she could.

It was 8pm when we parked and hopped out of Alice’s car. Music was blaring from a DJ stand set up courtesy of Eric. Leah was sitting on a large log with Sam close to the fire. I ran over and hugged them both. Alice appeared on my left side with a beer in each hand.

“Let the fun begin!” She handed me the drink and tapped her cup to mine. Sam, Leah, and I all laughed.

A few beers in Alice, Tyler, and I were sitting side by side singing as loudly as we could with the music. Eric was taking all of our requests and even took my iPod to pull some songs off of it that

he didn't have. If I hadn't felt the vibration I would never have noticed my phone. Esme. "I'll be right back."

I stood up walking away from the noise; Alice followed me. "Hello."

"Bella is Alice with you?"

"Yeah, we are down at LaPush Beach, is everything alright?"

"Oh yes dear. Is she close by?"

"Yep" I handed Alice the phone. "It's your mom."

"Yes mommy dearest?" I could tell she was trying to suck up incase she was in trouble.

"What?! When?!" I thought something was wrong until I saw her smile. "Really?! Well tell him to hurry his ass down here! Oh...umm...sorry mom. Uh huh...I won't. Love you too, bye." She flipped my phone shut and shoved it back into my pocket for me. She was just smiling.

"Well, what's going on?"

"Edward came home to visit!" she was still smiling too large.

"And that has you so happy why?" I was curious to the real reason behind her happiness.

"He brought friends home with him!" I must've still looked like I hadn't caught on, which I hadn't. "College boys Bella! College Boys!" She grabbed my hand and we headed back to the group.

Alice went straight to Eric and set up a play list that 'she could dance to' if I am quoting her exactly. He laughed at her and put her play list to start up next. Tyler brought us some beers that we were drinking before Alice's songs started up. I looked around for Rose who had disappeared when we arrived. She was probably with Quil.

I turned to Alice "Where is Rose?"

"Probably with Quil." I smirked and got on my tiptoes to look around for her. I spotted her by the fire with Leah.

"I'll meet you on the dance floor." She nodded. Tyler kissed my cheek and I headed to Rose.

"Hey slut, where you been?" I wiggled my eyebrows at her.

"Jealous much?" She winked and took my beer from me.

"Hey!"

“I just wanted a drink” she tried to hand it back to me.

“No way, I don’t know where your mouth has been tonight!” I laughed.

“That’s right, you don’t” then she licked the whole rim of the cup. “Guess it’s mine now.” She smiled.

I shoved her arm then Alice’s songs started up. “Alice?” she looked at me knowing that it was.

Alice appeared in front of us dancing seductively, and then she stopped and looked over us. Rose and I turned our heads. Walking up the beach was Emmett (even bigger than I remember him), Edward (in all his wonderful glorious hotness), and another guy who was extremely attractive and was sort of a mix between Em and Edward. Alice jumped between Rose and me heading for her brother who opened his arms to lift her off the ground and hug her. I could hear Alice squealing in happiness. Emmett pulled her up over his shoulder to carry her back to the fire.

“Put me down Emmett!” Alice screamed. Rose and I were laughing hard when he placed her down by the fire near us.

“Who is that exactly?” Rose whispered into my ear.

I smiled at her. “That’s Emmett, his parents live down the street from us.” She smiled and I could tell she was checking Em out.

“Damn it Em, don’t do that!” Alice pretended to pout.

“I can’t help it; you’re so tiny that I thought you were a doll!” He patted her head and headed over to where Edward and his other friend were grabbing a beer; stopping to say hello to a few people along the way.

Alice grabbed Rose and me to dance. We started dancing and other started joining in with us. First it started off fun and goofy, but then, classic Alice, the songs changed to ‘ass shaking’ songs as she liked to call them. Her line up was ‘Shake that Laffy Taffy’, ‘Single Ladies’, ‘Rock the Boat’, ‘Clothes Off’, ‘Freaxx’, ‘Coconut Juice’, ‘Don’t trust me’, ‘Fuck the Men (Let’s Drink to Us)’ one of our personal favorites. You get the idea.

Dancing between Alice and Rose was always hysterical because they would sandwich me and start grinding against me like I was the man of their dreams. It would get the complete attention of guys around us, which is what they wanted. I on the other hand, just liked to goof around. I had my guy.

I looked over to Tyler who was smiling wide as he watched us. I smiled at him and winked.

Then Rose bent forward in front of me and pushed back. I had to grab her hips just to keep balance while Alice had mine. We had drunk way too much. The first thing that caught my

attention was the Emmett had appeared next to us.

“Alice you better chill before your brother starts spitting fire” Emmett laughed loudly and nodded his head back toward Edward who was scowling at Alice and then at me.

“Oh Em, he can shove it! I’m just dancing and with a girl for god’s sake.” It was too late, Em had been side tracked. His eyes had focused on Rosalie.

“You want me to pick your tongue up for you Em?” I teased him. Alice giggled.

“Who is...” he leaned over to me and paused. “Bella, when did you get so damn hot?!” Alice started laughing as I blushed dark red.

“Nice Em, and that is my cousin Rosalie.” I was hoping that the blush would disappear from my face soon.

“Rosalie. I like.” He walked straight toward her and started dancing with her. I could only imagine what was going to happen between those two. Alice and I laughed continuing to dance with each other.

I was spinning Alice around when I glanced over her head and saw Edward watching us. I shrugged it off and kept dancing with Alice. Another song came on and Alice convinced me to start doing ‘tramp moves’ as I so lovingly called them. We did them for fun, so we started dropping to the ground and shaking our hips around. Tyler joined me and then Eric got his hands on Alice; that is until his hands dropped lower than her hips and Edward appeared next to them.

#####

Chapter: 3

A/N: Everyone loves a little Edward point of view. Sorry, I had to do a quick one. I promise to update again soon, but it will be mostly or all in Bella's point of view. I had to do the first sight from Edward though.

Chapter 3 – Return to High School

EPOV

I surprised my parents by coming home for a few days. I got home to find out that my dad was still at work and my mom was on her way over to play cards with Sue Swan. I introduced her to Jasper Whitlock, my friend from college. When I asked where Alice was she told me that she was down at LaPush with Bella and Rose. I’m not sure who Rose is, but when the hell did Alice

become old enough to hang in LaPush this late at night.

Mom called Alice for me, but ended up having to call Bella to get a hold of Alice. I can only imagine why Alice couldn't be reached and knowing how the beach fire parties went I really didn't want to think about it.

"Mary Alice Cullen!" Uh oh...Mom was mad at her for something. "I love you. Bye." Mom looked at me "Your darling sister said to get your ass down there." She smiled. Ahh...so that's why Alice got 'full named'.

I called Em and told him to be ready to head to LaPush in fifteen. Jasper and I dropped our stuff off upstairs and headed back out to my silver Volvo. It was my graduation present before I left for college in Seattle.

I drove straight down the street to Em's house and he came bounding out and jumped into the back seat of my car. "So Eddie, what's going on in LaPush?"

"Beach fire" I answered curtly.

"Ahhh....code name for beach party, great times! Do you remember...." I cut off his reminiscing.

"Alice is down there dude, so don't remind me!" I sped down toward the beach.

"Seriously dude? She's going to be eighteen this summer, why are you so freaked out over it?"

"She's my baby sister. I can't believe my parents let her go down there." I have always been protective of Alice; I don't know if it was because she so tiny and seemed so fragile. I mean, she could take care of herself, I knew this from experience; you didn't mess with Alice.

Walking down the beach brought back a few memories from high school. As I was thinking back I saw Alice dancing in front of two other girls. She spotted me and darted toward me. I opened my arms and pulled her into a large hug and she squealed. I missed her little ass. "You cut your hair?"

"Yep. You like?" She spun around for me.

"I do." Then I saw her eyes land on Jasper. "This is my friend Jasper. Jasper, this is my baby sister Alice."

"Nice to meet you Jasper." Oh Jesus, why did I bring friends home from college?

"Hey what about me?!" Emmett grabbed Alice and threw her over his shoulder, then headed for the fire.

"Put me down Emmett!" Alice screamed at him and he placed her down where she had ran over

from.

I looked down at Alice's friends and there was a blonde looking at Em and a brunette with a blue hat on whispering into her ear. I couldn't see the brunettes face.

"Damn it Em, don't do that!" Alice was still yelling at Emmett while I headed over to where the beer was being passed out. Emmett was catching up with us quickly.

"Hey Edward, what brings you back here?" It was Jacob Black.

"Just visiting family for awhile, ya know? We will be heading back in a few days for finals." I grabbed a beer and Em snatched it right out of my hand. "Sure Em, you can have it." I grabbed another one and this time Jasper took it laughing, "What the fuck you two?!" I laughed and grabbed a beer.

I turned back to see Alice dancing with her friends and she started some moves that were not family appropriate. I could see each guy drooling and gawking at my little sis. I saw Jasper's face was one them; I slapped his arm.

"What?!" he yelled at me.

"That's my little sister! Quit having those thoughts!" I joked with him.

"It's hard not to have those thoughts, especially when they dance like that." Jacob chimed in.

I gave him a dirty look. "Don't even think about it Black."

"Don't worry Cullen I won't go near your sister. Besides my bad thoughts are all about Bella." He smirked.

"Huh? Where's Bella? And you know what you shouldn't have those thoughts about her either; she is like a sister too. Plus she is Chief Swan's daughter." He looked at me like I was an idiot. "What?"

"You are looking at Bella." I must still looked confused. "She's dancing between your sister and Rose – the blonde."

I snapped my head back to see Alice being spun around by the brunette. "That's Bella?"

"It definitely is her; she sure grew up, didn't she?" I could hear the implication in his voice.

I couldn't take my eyes off her, and then she looked straight at me. Her hair wasn't as long as it used be and she had on a hat that made her look adorable. On top of that she had low-riding khakis and a tiny tight dark blue tank top; dancing around bare foot. *Jesus fucking Christ, since when did little Bella look like that?! So much for my speech to Jacob, now I was having unwholesome thoughts about Bella.*

“Now if I could just get her to dump that boyfriend of hers” Jacob spit out as he walked away.

Then I saw a guy come up and start dancing with Bella. As his hands went around her waist, I felt a knot in my stomach. *Looks like I am going to have to go all big brother for both of them. When did they get old enough to dance like that?*

Turning my attention to Alice I saw a guy drop his hands on my sister’s ass. It took me two seconds to get to them.

“Excuse me?” Alice snapped her head around as I grabbed her arm and walked her away from the ass grabber.

“What are you doing Edward?” she yelled at me.

“I’m not going to stand there and let some guy grab your ass while I watch.” I lectured.

“Then don’t look Edward!” she poked me in the chest. “You have some nerve. You were doing a lot worse than me when you were my age.”

“Exactly, which means I know what he” I pointed in the ass grabber’s direction “is thinking!”

“Maybe it’s the same thing that I am thinking Edward! Ever think of that? Hmmm???” She scowled and almost choked.

“W-what?!?!” I could feel my anger boiling up.

“Oh calm down Edward. I’m still a virgin for Christ’s sake.” I almost instantly dropped to my knees to thank god for that. She sighed. “But I won’t be forever Edward, so trust me to make my own decision.” She gave me the damn puppy dog eyes. *Fuck!*

“Fine, but I won’t like it!” I huffed as she wrapped her arm in mine and walked me back to the group that included the ass grabber.

“Everything okay?” I heard a magical voice. It was Bella talking to Alice, but shifting her gaze to me as well.

“Yeah, it’s Edward and his over protective brother act.” Alice responded to Bella.

“Okay, well Eric thought he was going to be murdered.” She laughed a perfect laugh. *Fuck she grew into such a hot.....like a little sister Edward. Like a little sister.*

Alice was laughing still and went to find Eric the ass grabber I assume.

“Welcome back” Bella was talking to me now.

“Thanks.” Why was it so awkward to talk to her? She smiled and headed back over to the guy that I assumed was her boyfriend.

I took a seat on one of the logs around the fire and started a conversation with Sam and a pretty pregnant Leah. “So how are things Sam?”

“Pretty good. Pretty busy.” He smiled and gestured to Leah. I smiled and took a drink of my beer.

Jasper joined us after a few minutes. I introduced Sam and Leah to Jasper. We sat back and talked for a while. Then I realized that the party had died down and people had taken off. Those left had congregated around the fire. I looked around and my eyes fell on Alice lying in Bella’s lap asleep. Emmett was sitting between Bella and I think her name was Rose. Both girls had their head on his shoulder and Em had his arms around them.

He caught me looking at him. “Jealous Cullen?” He laughed loudly.

“Definitely McCarty” I laughed back shaking my head. I looked down at my watch; realizing that it was passed two in the morning. “Hey Em, you ready to get going?” He looked down at Rose then nodded yes.

“Ready Jasper?” He nodded yes.

I walked over to Em to help with the girls. Bella stood up slowly and wobbly. “Can you walk?” She nodded yes, but took one step and started to fall. I wrapped my arms around her and picked her up bridal style. At the moment that I held her there was an electric pulse that seemed to radiate from her through my arms and throughout my body. I had never felt anything like it before.

“Ready?” Emmett broke me out of my trance. I noticed that he had Rose in his arms.

“What about Al?” I looked back.

“I got her” Jasper stood with my sister in his arms. The look on his face made me cringe. I’m gonna have to have a conversation with him.

We started heading toward my car, but Leah stopped us.

“Hey, I’m supposed to drive them home.” She held Alice’s keys in her hands.

“Okay, how about you follow us?” I motioned with my head for her to follow us.

“Okay.” She ran ahead and opened the doors to Alice’s car.

I placed Bella in the back seat and Jasper put Alice in the passenger seat. I looked at Em who was taking Rose to my car with him. I smirked and headed to my car.

When we arrived at my house Leah handed me Alice's keys and headed next door. Em was carrying Rose into the house when I met Jasper at the car. He was about to open the door for the back seat. "I got her." I said a little too quickly to Jasper; he shrugged and walked around to get Al. I had to see if the same spark happened again.

I could feel the tension and the pull before I even touched her and then once I touched her the electricity seemed to be even stronger. Maybe I was just expecting it, but I couldn't figure it out.

We took the girls up to Al's room; placing them on Al's bed. I took Bella's hat off and tucked a stray strand behind her ear. *She really has grown up.*

"I don't want to shop...Alice...." She mumbled. *So Bella still talks in her sleep.* I smiled and left Alice's room; still trying to figure out what that feeling was.

#####

Chapter: 4

Chapter 4 – High School the End: Part II

I woke up between Alice and Rose. I couldn't remember how we exactly got there; I only prayed that Leah had driven us home like we planned. I tried to move, but Alice had her arm around my waist spooning me. It wasn't the first time we had woken up this way and I was pretty sure it would be the last. I patted my pockets and found my phone to check the time. It was almost one in the afternoon. I moved Alice's arm and climbed over Rose.

"Just five more minutes..." Rose mumbled and covered her head with a pillow. I stifled a giggle and headed to Alice's bathroom.

I jumped into the shower to wash the fire smell and sand away. After drying off and combing out my hair, I headed to the dresser drawer that Alice kept some clothes in for me. I put on a pair of gray cotton shorts (that were a little short for my taste, but Alice insisted on stocking these in my drawer) and a white tank top, and then I pulled my hair up into a bun at the back of my head. I threw on some sock, my tennis shoes, grabbed my iPod and headed out for my run. After a night of drinking it was hard to do, but I knew that it would help get the alcohol out of my system.

As I walked out of Alice's I heard voices, but I didn't stop to see who it was. I turned on my favorite play list and started my normal track around the neighborhood; waving to a few neighbors along the way. I was halfway back to Alice's when my phone vibrated. It was a text from Alice.

On your way back yet? I figured she would still be sleeping.

Halfway. I replied.

Well hurry your ass up. U want waffles with us?

Sure. I answered and picked up my pace.

When I got back I headed straight to the kitchen where I could smell breakfast. Alice and Rose were sitting at the breakfast bar watching Esme cook. I walked up and hugged Alice.

“Ewwww....Bella, you are all sweaty. Get off of me!” Alice pushed me back and I laughed. I grabbed her back to me and hugged her tighter. “Yuck. Ew! Stop!”

“Jesus Alice, can you be any louder?” Edward walked in with Em and his friend on either side of him. Em was wearing his trademark dimpled smile and Edward’s friend was pretty reserved but smiling at Alice’s behavior.

“Shut it Edward! It’s not my fault. Bella won’t stop sweating on me.” I laughed and I stuck my forehead to her arm. “Oh my God Bella if you don’t stop we are going shopping today!” I immediately backed off with my arms up in surrender.

“Okay, you win.” The guys laughed. Alice was wiping herself off with a napkin.

“You know the best way to get rid of sweat Alice?” Emmett posted the question.

“How, oh wise Emmet?” She rolled her eyes at him. With that he lifted her off her seat while she kicked and yelled.

“Settle down you guys!” Esme shouted as Em carried Alice to the pool and tossed her in. Rose and I were in tears as Alice’s head popped up from under the water.

“You think this is funny?!” She pretended to be mad at all of us.

“They won’t much longer” Em boasted as he shoved me into the pool and went for Rose. He caught her, but Rose snake her legs around him and he followed her in.

Alice and I were laughing so hard from the side of the pool while Em stood in the pool shocked. Rose stood up, flexed jokingly, and then winked at Emmett; who in turn smiled widely at her. “I think I’m in love.” Em stated with his dimples in full presentation.

“Okay, enough you guys. Go get dried off, breakfast is ready.” Esme shouted from the door.

We all climbed out dripping. Edward grabbed towels from the cabinet that Esme kept outside and tossed one to each of us. As we headed back into the house Alice and I gave Rose a high-five. Esme giggled.

After we changed and ate breakfast, we decided to hang out in the living room to watch movies. Alice picked out a 'Zack and Miri Make a Porno' and put it in. Rose grabbed the oversized chair, Alice spread out on the couch, and I was curled up on the king sized bean bag chair that could fit about 2-3 people.

Alice has an obsession with previews, so after we finally got through all of those we started the movie. I was comfortably wrapped up in a blanket when I heard Rose shriek. I looked up to see Emmett pick her up take her spot and place her on his lap.

"Ever heard of personal space Emmett?" She was trying to get up, but Em was holding her down.

"I know you like it, so let's watch the movie." Em responded. Rose tried to fight with him, but he wouldn't let up. I laughed and she scowled at me; which made me laugh harder.

"Alice you are too small to take up a whole couch" Edward said to her as he picked her head up and sat down.

"What the hell?" Alice sat up, paused the movie, and looked at Edward. "Go to one of the other rooms. Why are you in here?"

"Cause I love you so so much baby sis!" He smiled at her. I stifled my laugh.

"Edward, go to the den or the basement. We were in here first." She pouted.

"Sorry, I want to watch this movie." He kicked his feet up on the table.

"You can have it after we are done with it" she was pleading now.

"Just press play." He looked over Alice's head. "Grab a seat Jasper." He smiled back at Alice as Jasper sat on the other side of her.

Alice huffed and crossed her arms.

"You are such a big baby" Edward chuckled.

"I was comfortable, until you ruined it." She spit out at him.

"Come down here with me" I shouted back to Alice. I turned my head to Alice and noticed Edward looking at me funny. It looked like he was going to say something, but Alice cut him off.

"You're an ass" she yelled at him and then joined me on the bean bag chair.

We were watching the movie and laughing loudly. Alice and I kept quoting the movie to each other and laughing even harder about that. Once the movie was finished Alice and I looked

around to see that only Jasper was awake with us.

I got up and headed to the kitchen for something to drink. Alice headed to the bathroom. As I was going back into the living room I saw Alice and Jasper talking in the hallway. I stopped for a moment so I didn't disturb them. I could only see Jasper's face, but his expression looked like he was completely taken by Alice. I went back into the kitchen and grabbed some chips.

Sitting at the breakfast bar eating chips while I looked through one of Alice's magazine I heard someone enter the kitchen. I assumed it was Alice.

"So what was that...." Before I could finish my question I realized that it was Edward. "Oh. Sorry, I thought you were Al." I smiled and hopped up to put the chips away and head back to the living room.

"So, Bella, how's school?" I turned and Edward was leaning against the counter right behind me.

"Um..good I guess. How about you?" I shoved the chips onto the shelf and shut the cabinet.

"Good." He was smiling a delicious crooked smile.

"That's good." It was slightly awkward. I mean I obvious knew Edward, but we weren't really close. I was Alice's best friend and he was older, so we didn't travel in the same circles when he lived at home. I smiled and started toward the door, but felt him grip my arm. The moment he touched me it felt like a shock ran through my body. Caught of guard by it, I jerked away and looked at him.

"Sorry. I was just going to...." Before he could finish Alice came in the room. We both looked at her.

"What?" She looked between the two of us.

"Nothing" I said and walked to the living room.

Edward, Emmett, and Jasper all headed back to college on Sunday afternoon. Alice and I were hanging out in my room while she decided what I would where to school, every day, this week. I was working on my laptop trying to design a new program for the drafting department at school. It was a project that I was a part of.

"Bella, we seriously need to get you better glasses than those ones." I looked up over the rims of my glasses. "I think that you could look really hot in glasses if you had the right ones."

"The last time I checked my glasses were for vision improvement not fashion." I laughed.

"Yeah, but you have completely grown out of the geeky glasses look. Don't you think?" She winked at me.

“Are you saying that I was geek, shrimp?” I chuckled knowing that she hated when I picked on her size.

“You’re just jealous, because great things come in the smallest packages” she smiled widely.

“That’s old. Try a new saying.” I pushed my laptop shut and leaned back in my chair.

She looked deep in thought for a moment. “Okay. I’m not short, I’m fun sized” she smiled again. After that one I laughed hysterically. My laughter was cut off when Alice’s phone rang.

She looked at her phone and smiled one of the biggest smiles I have seen on her. I mouthed to her “who is that”, she just continued talking. It only took a couple of words on her part for me to figure out that it was none other than Jasper. I mouthed to her again “You slut”. She silently laughed and covered the phone, then turned away and continued talking. Her brother is going to kill her.

The final month of school passed and we were all excited for Leah and Rose’s graduation party. They were having a joint party here at our house and we were helping Sue set up everything. “Can you girls make sure to set out enough ice in the coolers please? I don’t want to run out. Oh and make sure the coolers are not in the sun.” Sue had been buzzing around since five o’clock this morning.

Most family had arrived this afternoon, with some friends. The rest of our school friends would show up later in the evening. Seth had come home for the summer to work here. Emmett and Edward had shown up last night to spend a few months of summer here before heading back to school next year. Leah was preparing to move in with Sam and start community college. Rose was preparing to leave for college in Seattle, which was going to suck. I knew I was going to miss her.

Alice had stayed in contact with Jasper and would only say that they were friends with similar interests. Emmett was basically stalking Rose, but secretly she loved it. Tyler and I were still together; though we had started spending less time together. He was away for a month with his family.

Rose had gone upstairs with Leah to get ready for their party. Alice and I ran to fill out water balloons and hide them in the tree house. We had evil plans for later tonight. We also made sure to store the balloons with ice in an extra cooler.

The party started the normal routine of parents making toasts and speeches, everyone eating and drinking, along with conversations. The DJ my parents had gotten arrived and I showed him where to set up. Most family started to depart when the rest of the high school friends arrived for the party. The bar was set up and the DJ started up. Charlie and Sue headed inside with some of the remaining parents to leave the party to the ‘kids’.

“I can’t believe that you are leaving us after the summer” I pouted to Rose.

“It really sucks” Alice added.

“We will still talk and I’m not that far away. I can visit you and just think, you can come visit me.” Rose had a gleam to her eye when she said this.

Alice responded quickly. “Why didn’t I think of that?”

“Because you don’t need to hang out with college guys until you are in college.” We all turned to see Edward looking at Alice.

“Stalk me much Edward?” Alice laughed at him. He smiled and walked to a group of people. I couldn’t help but watch. He was just too hot not to check out, especially from behind. *Quite the perfect ass.* Alice smacked my arm.

“What?!” I furrowed my brow at her.

“Quit checking out my brother” she laughed.

“Who could help not to?” Rose chimed in.

“Exactly my point” I shoved Alice and nodded in agreement with Rose.

“That’s just gross” Alice made a disgusted look then laughed. “Supposedly the Greek god has a girl friend coming to visit for a few weeks.” She rolled her eyes.

“What’s wrong with that?” I looked at her confused.

“I’d much rather he invited Jasper to visit” she winked at me. I laughed.

“Jesus Alice, you are such a whore” I giggled and drug her over to where everyone was dancing.

Once we got more people to start dancing, including Rose who was dancing with Emmett; Alice and I snuck away. We were about to start up to the tree house when someone grabbed me.

“Ahh!” I turned to see Edward laughing; Alice joined him. “Holy Shit” I said as I tried to calm myself. “That wasn’t funny” I choked out in between laughs.

“Fuck yes it was. So, what are you two up to?” He raised an eyebrow at us.

All too suspiciously we answered “Nothing” at the same time and quickly looked at each other. Then we bolted for the ladder and started climbing.

Alice was looking for our targets as I was getting the balloons out of the cooler. We were stifling our laughter as we got to the little wooden window and spotted Rose. Alice launched first and we heard Rose yell. I found Leah and launched at the ground near her. She started yelling. Okay so I realize that this may seem mean, but this is payback for the two of them doing this to Alice and

me on my birthday the year before.

I was grabbing more ammunition when Alice got an evil look on her face. “What are you up to?” I asked her looking out the window I watched her hit Edward with a balloon. I fell to the floor laughing hysterically as he yelled. I randomly just launched to balloons out without even looking.

We were in a giggle fit when I heard footsteps in the tree house. I had a balloon in my hand and held it up in defense. I thought it would be Rose, but it wasn’t her. It was Edward. His hair was soaked and sticking to his forehead. We took one look at him and cracked up.

“She did it!” Alice yelled and pointed to me.

“What?! I did not! Edward it was Alice and you know it!” I threw the balloon I had at Alice and soaked her.

“I knew you two were up to no good.” He smiled crookedly.

I was wrestling Alice away from the balloons so she couldn’t get me when I felt a splash against my shoulder. I turned to see Edward with the remaining balloons. “Hey, it was Alice!” I laughed.

Then he threw one at Alice. Alice and I got up and quickly went after him. Alice grabbed him down to the floor by his legs. I pushed his chest so that his back was on the floor while I tried to reach for the balloons that he was trying to hold away from us. The pulsing shock was instantaneous. I was about to pull back but I felt his arm wrap partially around my waist and I froze. Alice started tickling him and he dropped the balloons. That snapped me out of the daze and I grabbed the two balloons that were left. I broke one over his head and took off down the ladder. When my feet hit the ground I heard Alice yell out to me.

“Bella, look out!” I looked up to see Edward coming down quickly. I stepped back. When his feet hit the ground I smacked him with the other balloon soaking his chest. He paused for a moment and I took that opportunity to take off and hide.

I made it to the dining room where my parents and the Cullen’s, along with some other parents were sitting around the table talking. They all turned to me taking in my appearance; soaking wet and out of breath. “Here we go” was all Sue said. Then I heard shoes squeak. I snapped my head to see Edward coming after me with Alice close behind. I bolted to the other side of the table and stood behind my dad.

Edward stopped at the doorway as the room took in his appearance like they did mine. “Here we go is right” Esme spoke this time “Everyone hold on to your chairs.” The room laughed and Edward took off after me.

I made it out of the dining room and through the front door of the house, slamming it behind me, and to the side of the house. I stopped to catch my breath and realized that Edward was not behind me. I took in a deep breath and apprehensively walked to the back yard. *No sign of him,*

good. As soon as I thought it and walked out of the shadow of the house I heard Alice again.

“Bella Run!!!!” I turned to see Em holding Alice with Rose trying to cover her mouth. Edward was about at arms length. I took off toward the tree house, but he caught me before I could get up the ladder and threw me over his shoulder.

“Put me down!” I smacked his back. He just laughed.

“Paybacks are a bitch, aren’t they Bella.” I tried to squirm out of his grip, but it wasn’t working.

I then realized where we were headed. “No. Edward no. Not the pool! Come on!” Then he tossed me in. I swam to the shallow end and splashed water at him as he was almost in tears laughing. “Jerk!” I laughed.

“Pool Party!” Emmett came running and cannon balled into the pool. Rose joined next along with a few other people.

I climbed out and started walking toward Alice. “Don’t you dare Bella. This outfit is new!” I playfully scowled at her. She started to run, but Edward grabbed her and brought her to the pool. I took her other arm and we threw her in.

Edward was laughing again and while he was distracted, I took the opportunity to shove him into the pool. I heard Emmett laugh louder than anyone else.

“You will pay Swan!” Edward shouted as Alice tackled him into the water.

Everyone climbed out of the pool and started to head home. Rose and I went to our house to change. Rose went over to Alice’s while I finished my shower and got into dry clothes. I was about to walk onto Alice’s back porch when I heard Edward’s voice. “Hey.”

“Yeah?” I stopped where I was and looked over to him.

“I think that this is yours.” I saw that he had my shoe in his hand.

I walked over and grabbed it. “Yep. Thanks.” I turned to go into the house.

“Bella.” I turned to look at him, but didn’t expect him to be so close to my face. One more step and his body would be pressed against mine. I don’t know why, but there was this pull to put my hands on him, to touch him. It was like a deep subconscious desire. My hand twitched when he took half a step closer and began to close the gap. His face was leaning somewhat down toward mine and I held my breath.

“Edward!?” Emmett yelled from the back door. I jumped and stepped back quickly. *What the hell!?* “Hey dude, Victoria is calling your phone man.” I could see that Edward was still looking at me, but I ignored him and walked quickly into the house to find Alice.

I am beyond confused about what almost happened. Summer is going to be interesting to say the least.

#####

Chapter: 5

Chapter 5 - Big Brother

A week had passed since Rose and Leah's party. A few days after the party Leah had started having false labor pains. So we were all anxiously waiting for the real thing to happen. Leah was miserable and I tried to spend a few hours a day hanging out with her; painting her toe nails, talking about different baby names, watching movies, and getting her banana popsicles.

Leah and I were seated on the couch in the living room when our front door slammed shut. We both turned our attention in that direction. Alice came waltzing in.

"What's up with you?" I asked Alice as I turned my head back to the TV.

"Edward's girlfriend just got here, that's what." She huffed and plopped down into a chair.

"So, is she a bitch or something?" Leah asked.

"NO." Alice huffed again.

"O..k..a..y. So care to explain why you are so pissed then?" I gave her my full attention now.

"She's actually nice. I like her, and that's the problem."

"You wanted to not like her?" I asked.

"YES" she looked at me full on. "I wanted to have something to yell at him for, like he does to me about boyfriends and dating."

I started laughing. "Al, I think that I would rather like the person than have some awful bitch in my house for a few weeks." Leah was shaking her head in agreement.

Alice slouched back into the chair and silently watched TV.

I woke up about an hour later by Leah shouting at me. "BELLA!! Get up! Please! It's time!"

I jolted up. "Time? Like time, time??!!" I shouted at her.

“YES!”

“Fuck!” I ran to grab her bag, the keys, and my phone. Alice jumped up and pulled her phone out too.

I called Sam who was meeting us at the hospital and then I called Sue who was out running errands. Alice called Esme, Charlie, and Seth, who was out with friends. I helped Leah to the car and we took off to the hospital.

Two hours later we were sitting in the waiting room; Sam was with Leah and the rest of us were sitting in a group. Seth arrived just then with Em, Edward, and I assumed Victoria following him. They joined our group to wait.

Seth sat next to me. “Is Sam with her?”

“Yes” Sue answered him.

“Is she okay?” Sue nodded her head. Seth made a loud sigh and I put my hand on his. He turned and smiled at me.

Tired of sitting in silence Sue started some generic conversations. She talked to Seth about college, and then turned to Edward and Em. Edward introduced Victoria to all of us. Alice was right, she was really nice. Though they were an odd pair; Edward was your typical type of college guy, but Victoria was a total nature child. We learned that she was a vegetarian, was an animal rights supporter, and was studying anthropology as her current college major. Her appearance was unique. Victoria had long, wild, curly red hair, a very fair complexion with light freckles across her nose. She was quite impressive and a little intimidating.

Sam suddenly emerged from the double doors. “Sam?” Sue stood quickly.

He smiled. “Everything is fine.” He hugged Sue. “Bella?”

“Yeah” I said quickly.

“Leah is asking for you. Do you mind..?” He motioned for me to come with him.

Alice pushed me up from my seat and Rose gave me a reassuring smile. “Of course not” He grabbed my hand and pulled me behind the doors with him.

We entered Leah’s room. She smiled with effort as I walked over to her. “How are you feeling?” then I rolled my eyes at myself. “Dumb question, huh?” I smiled sheepishly.

“I’m fine. Just tired and ready for this to be over” she lightly shook like she was laughing. Then she grabbed my hand quickly and squeezed.

“It’s okay baby. You’re almost there...” Sam rubbed her back as he spoke. “There worst part is over.”

“Easy. For. You. To. Say.” Leah spit in between pants. Once the pain surpassed Leah looked into my eyes. “Bella, will you please stay with me?” I must’ve looked shocked because she smiled lightly and put her hand on my cheek. “Bells, you are my sister. I love you.”

“Of course I’ll stay with you” I leaned in and kissed her forehead.

Four hours later Marie Sue had arrived. She was almost seven pounds, 20 inches long, and had a full head of black hair when she arrived. Leah had decided to name the baby after Sue and me; well Marie is my middle name. Everyone ‘oohed’ and ‘awwed’ over the baby before leaving Sam and Leah to enjoy their daughter alone.

Alice, Rose, and I were lying around Alice’s room talking about the whole birth and delivery; Rose couldn’t wait to have children where Alice and I were a little more hesitant, especially after what I witnessed today.

There was a knock on the door.

“Come in” Alice yelled not moving.

We all looked to the door as Victoria entered the room. “Sorry” she looked at Alice apologetically. “Um...Edward said that you may have some lotion that I could get?”

“Sure” Alice said smiling. She really did like Victoria. “Follow me.” Victoria followed, clearly not knowing what she was asking for. Rose and I looked at each other and smiled waiting for the shock of Alice and any type of products would have on her.

“This is all yours?!” Victoria asked, clearly shocked. Rose and I giggled.

“Yep...” Victoria cut her off before she could say anything else.

“Do you know that they test these products on animals Alice?” Victoria held up a bottle of some lotion in one hand and some make up in the other. Alice looked dumbstruck with her mouth hanging open. Rose and I were stifling giggles. “Alice you shouldn’t buy these products. These companies are known for their cruelty.”

“Ummm...okay” it was all that Alice could get out before Victoria grabbed some Vaseline and headed out of Al’s room.

“I’ll get you some information on animal friendly products” Victoria said proudly before shutting the door behind her.

Once she was gone. Rose and I busted into hysterics.

“Oh. My. God! Seriously?! Did that just really happen?!” Alice shouted toward us and started laughing with us.

“I thought...I was...watching...a movie...” Rose laughed out. I was in tears and my sides started hurting.

We laughed for another ten minutes or so before it finally subsided.

Two days later Leah and Marie were released from the hospital. They had come to stay with us for two weeks before moving in with Sam down in LaPush. Charlie and Sue had set up a bassinet and changing table in Leah’s room in preparation for arrival.

Marie had her days and nights mixed up for a few days. Sue and Leah had been exhausted. I would watch Marie in the morning while they would catch up on some sleep. Sam had been staying most nights at our house to help Leah. During the first week we also figured out that, for some reason, I could soothe Marie very quickly when she was fussy. Leah was her first choice, obviously; however, if I held her to my chest then she would calm down and typically fall asleep.

Charlie and Sam were totally smitten with Marie. She had them wrapped around her finger. Charlie had lovingly nicknamed her Poco, short for Pocahontas. Leah thought it was adorable and the rest of us had even picked up the habit of using her nickname as well. Sam was the extremely loving and doting father. Leah was a queen in his eyes for having given him this little girl. It was truly an amazing dynamic to witness.

Tonight there was another beach fire; however, not a large gathering. There wasn’t going to be a DJ or a bar set up. This was a ‘bring your own’ set up along with a radio and some iPods. It was sort of set up last minute. Alice, Rose and I had gotten ready at my house and headed over to the beach in my truck.

When we arrived to the beach there was a solid crowd hanging out. Rose stood up on her tip toes once we got out of my truck.

“Can you guys see who is down there?” she asked.

“Well I can see Em and Edward’s cars parked down from us, so they are there.” Alice motioned her head toward where they were parked. Rose smiled.

“I can see Tyler’s van down there which means that he and Eric are probably down there as well.” I reached into my truck and grabbed my blanket, cell phone, and iPod.

We headed toward the fire.

EPOV

I felt that she was here before I saw her. I don’t know how, but it’s like I knew she had arrived. I actually saw Alice first. She came bouncing in and headed for the radio with her iPod in hand.

Next came Rose who swayed into the firelight and Em immediately called for her attention. She waved and smiled, but didn't come over to him. I could tell that Em was disappointed. Then there she was; the creature that was creating so many weird things and feelings occur around her and me. She had on baggy jeans and a tight faded band t-shirt, her hair was hanging loosely around her face, and her feet were bare. She was simple, natural, and beautiful. I don't exactly know what is going on between us, but staying further away from her has become my plan until I return to Seattle. I had tried just being friends and hanging around with the girls it just made things worse.

Victoria was sitting between my legs and I pulled her closer to me as I watched Bella throw out a blanket and sit cross legged. Rose sat to her right and Alice appeared on her left with a couple of bottles of beer. They all had their iPods out and seemed to be going through their lists. I was curious to know what was on Bella's, but I pushed that curiosity aside and started talking to Em.

During my conversation with Em I noticed that Mike Newton had taken a seat next to Bella. I instantly felt a pang in my chest watching him lean into her. I could tell that she was completely annoyed by him. As I was watching she looked up directly into my eyes; I pulled my head away quickly in hopes that she didn't catch me watching her.

I looked back up again and she was looking in another direction. I followed her gaze to Tyler's face. Watching the silent communication between them, it looked as if she wanted him to come to her but he wasn't budging. *Idiot!*

She was fidgeting for a moment and then I watched her pull out her phone. I stood up and headed over. Clearly Newton wasn't getting the message.

BPOV

"Alice we are not going to listen to Britney Spears tonight" I laughed at her. She scowled.

"Fine" she huffed. "Rose would you please acknowledge Emmitt, so I don't have to watch him pout any longer?" Alice giggled and rolled her eyes. Emmett had been pouting since Rose sat with us instead of going to him.

"Oh, it's good for him to miss me. It makes him want me more." She winked at Alice and me. We started laughing.

"Rose, you are really twisted. You know that?" Alice giggled.

"You keep telling me that, but I don't have any clue what you are talking about." She smirked.

"So what are you three lovelies up to this evening?" I rolled my eyes at the sound of Mike's voice.

"Newton" I said without looking at him. He sat right behind me and a little too closely. I looked up toward the fire and as I sighed heavily I met Edward's eyes. He quickly dropped his head.

Was he staring over here?

“So Bella...” I knew where this was leading already “How about we take a walk down the beach?” UGH!

“Mike, you know that I am with Tyler.” I curtly replied.

“I just want to walk Bella and I thought that I would ask if you would like to join me.” I could feel his breath at the back of my neck and I wanted to just snap my head back into his nose.

I looked around for Tyler, but saw him sitting down from me. I caught his attention and gave him a look that begged for him to help me. He rolled his eyes and just shrugged. *Did he seriously just shrug like it was no big deal? UGH. Tyler and I seriously need to have a talk.*

I pulled out my cell phone like I had gotten a message. I quickly sent a text to Leah to save me, but got no reply. So I decided on another plan. “Sorry Mike, but Leah needs me for a minute.” I gave him an apologetic look.

“Hey, do you need someone to come with you? I could always keep you company.” He still pushed.

“That’s okay, I don’t want to interrupt your fun here.” I stood up to go.

“It’s fine, really.” He stood with me. *Shit!!!!*

“Hey Bella, are you ready to go?” I quickly spun around and looked right into Edward’s smiling face. “You ready to umm...”

“To head over to Leah and Sam’s...let’s go.” I smiled thankfully at him. “See ya later, okay Mike?”

We started down the beach toward the parking lot.

“Oh my god, Edward you are a life saver!” I sighed out. “Thank you so much.”

“No problem. I thought you looked a little uncomfortable with him.” He laughed.

“That’s not even close to it. Try annoyed, creeped out, yuck!”

He laughed. “Well you’re welcome.”

After reaching the parking lot I headed for my truck but felt a tug on my arm. “Hey?!”

“If you think that I am getting in that death trap of a truck, you are insane.” He smiled crookedly.

“Look, I appreciate what you did, but you don’t have to go to Sam and Leah’s with me really. I

can go from here.” I dug my heels into the ground and turned around to face him. *Did he look disappointed?*

“How believable would it be if I went back over there? Hmm?” He pulled my arm dragging me to his car.

“Edward, seriously, it’s not a big deal and hopefully it will give Mike a blatant hint to back off.” I smiled and pulled away from his touch. I don’t know what the pull was with him, but it was there and it was strong. Being in a small space like a car, alone, was making me nervous.

“Oh come on.” He wrapped his arm around my shoulder and pulled me with him. The damn current that flows off of him made goose bumps prickle my skin.

He opened the door for me and ushered me into his car. I hesitated, but he just gently nudged me to get into the car. I took a deep breath and then climbed in. Quicker than I thought imaginable Edward was climbing into the driver’s seat.

“So where is Sam’s place?” He looked at me grinning.

I gave him the directions and we were off. It was a quiet ride and thankfully Sam’s place wasn’t far, so it was a quick trip. Once we pulled up; I hopped out and headed for the door to the house. I heard the baby shrieking.

“Leah?” I announced as I walked in the door.

“Thank god Bella!” Sam exclaimed.

“What’s wrong?!” I hurried to him. He was rocking her and bouncing her, trying to calm her.

“I don’t know. I fed her, changed her, and I even burped her. Nothing is helping. Leah went to get some more things that she left at your house and to get some groceries, but she hasn’t gotten back yet. I don’t know what to do.” I felt Edward’s presence beside me.

“Maybe you should try bathing her; doesn’t that sometimes calm a baby? Edward proposed.

“Hand her over” I said and Sam smiled knowingly.

“I was hoping you would say that.” He placed Marie in my arms.

I cuddled her and swaddled her up and then pressed her to my chest, snuggling tightly. I walked around for a few moments and then she was quiet.

“Bella you are my savior!!!” Sam exclaimed as he fell back to the couch. “I love that little girl to death, but lord her screams are so hard to listen to.”

“It’s alright. I got her until Leah get’s back.” I smiled and patted him on his arm. Sam smiled up

at me. "Edward, you don't have to wait for me, I don't know how long I will be."

"It's alright. I can wait. I'm not going to just leave you here to walk back later." He sat down on a chair across from Sam. "So I take it that she has a thing for Bella?" Edward asked Sam.

"Not just a thing man. It's like a magic touch. Leah is probably the only other one that can calm her better." Sam stood up. "Do you want a drink?"

"No, I'm good, but thank you." Edward replied.

"Bella?"

"No thanks Sam." I smiled at him.

EPOV

I couldn't believe how loud a baby could scream until I heard Marie crying with Sam, but the moment that Bella snuggled her she was silent. It was amazing. Sam had said that Bella had a magic touch; I couldn't agree more.

Bella sat on the couch with Marie snuggled to her chest and Bella's hand rubbing her back. I had never been jealous of an infant until that moment.

Leah walked in the door about twenty minutes later. She paused took take in the room. "Bella?" "Edward?" "Ummm...what's going on?"

"Lee lee, Bella arrived just in time to save me." Sam walked over and kissed her cheek and grabbed some bags from her. "Marie was in shriek mode and nothing I did was working. Thank god that she arrived when she did."

Leah smiled. "Thanks Bella."

"No problem." Bella smiled brightly at her.

"So I am still confused about how you and Edward got here to begin with?" She eyed Bella and then she eyed me closely.

I answered first. "I saved Bella from Mike Newton." I chuckled.

"Ahh..." Leah answered still a little confused. Bella went into a more detailed story about Newton, Tyler, and my interference. "Tyler seriously didn't come help you out Bella?! Are you serious?"

"I know, right! That's what I thought." Bella answered her. "You want me to take her to bed?"

"Yeah, thanks." Leah smiled as Bella left the room.

Leah's attention turned to me. She was looking at me intently like she was trying to figure something out in her head.

"What Leah?"

"Umm..Nothing." She turned her head quickly, but I could see a smirk playing on her mouth.

"Alright, well, we are going to head back to the beach." Bella announced as she entered the room. She leaned over and kissed Leah on the cheek. "Edward, you should be ready by now I'm sure." She half smiled.

"If you are ready to go then we can, it's really been fine." I saw Leah look at me again with the previous expression she had on her face before.

We went back to my car and headed back to the beach in silence. I didn't know what to say, but I could feel the pull between us. It took everything I had to not touch her. My hand twitched and I gripped the steering wheel tighter until my knuckles whitened. I rolled down my window a little hoping that the night air would clear my thoughts, but the air just mixed with her scent and made it dance around me.

Jesus, what happened to my plan on staying away from her? Ugh.

I parked my car and we walked back to the fire. Quite a few people had taken off. I looked to see Victoria sitting with Emmett and Rose talking. Bella's voice yanked me out of my thoughts.

"Edward, I am sorry that you got pulled away for so long. Thank you for helping me out though." She smiled and waited for my response.

"No problem Bella, I'd do it anytime." I flashed my crooked smile.

"You know, Alice is wrong about you..." she smirked.

"Wrong? How so?" I inquired.

"You're not such a bad big brother after all." She smiled and walked back to her blanket where Alice was sitting, with that damn ass grabber guy.

I smiled and headed back to Victoria; my brain swimming from Bella's comment. *Big brother? Not such a bad big brother? She thinks of me as a big brother, or does she think I helped her because I see her as my little sister? FUCK!*

#####

Chapter: 6

Chapter 6 – Sleeping with Jasper

The weekend following the beach fire was going to be sunny and warm, finally. We were all looking forward to it, and had decided that we would put together a pool gathering at Alice's. Alice, Rose and I made some phone calls to invite people over.

"Bella, quit arguing and just put it on!" Alice was yelling because I didn't want to wear a bikini. I prefer my tankini; at least it was more coverage.

"Alice what was wrong with my suit? N.o.t.h.i.n.g." I put as much sarcasm as I could into my words.

"It was last season. Besides I don't understand why you would want to hide that hot body of yours from everyone." She leaned out of her closet and winked at me. I sighed and put my face into my hands. "Put the damn bikini on Bella."

"Seriously Bella just go put it on, people will be arriving soon." Of course Rose would side with her as she stood in all her glorious curves wrapped in a red string bikini. Ugh!

I changed into bikini and put a pair of boxer shorts and a white tank top on over top, slid on my flip flops and headed downstairs with the girls. Alice passed out the orders of things for Rose and I to do, so we spent twenty minutes finishing the final details with Al. People started to arrive; Tyler and Eric arrived first; as other's arrived in groups of two or more over the course of 45 minutes.

Alice had turned on the speakers outside so that music was playing while everyone swam, talked, and just hung out. Rose decided it was time to start up a game of 'Marco Polo', so everyone started playing. I was standing on one of the pool ladder steps while Jacob was trying to get his hands on someone. As Jake got closer to me I was prepared to dive over him to get away; however, a group of last minute arrived through the house and caught my attention. I saw Edward and Victoria, Emmett, and Jasper walking through the back door and standing on the back patio watching what was going on at the pool. At that moment I felt Jake's hands touch my thighs; I snapped my head down and saw his eyes open quickly.

"Hah Bella! I got you!" He yelled as he threw me over his shoulder and pulled me down into the water. I could feel his hands wander a little too much over my body, which was a common occurrence with Jake. I pushed off of him, swimming away and back to the surface. I broke through the surface of the water to see Edward standing near the pool looking at me angrily. *What the hell did I do to him?*

"Okay, Bella, you are up! Close those eyes!" Alice giggled and splashed me. I closed my eyes and started the routine of the game. We continued to play for about 15 more minutes before it

turned into a splash and dunking battle.

“Cannonball!” Emmett yelled as he ran and jumped into the pool. Everyone cleared the way. He emerged from the water with a huge grin on his face.

“You are such a beast” Rose shouted from the side of the pool. Emmett quickly swam over to her, grabbed her by the waist, and pulled her into the water with him.

I climbed out of the pool and headed over to Alice who was lounging on a chair. I rang the water out of my hair onto her back.

“Ahhhh!” She snapped her head around “Bella, I am going to kick your ass!”

I laughed “Oooh, I am so scared...” I teased and lay in the lounge chair next to her. Tyler walked over and sat with me.

“Hey Bells” He smiled at me.

“Hey Ty, what have you been up to? We haven’t gotten to talk too much since school ended.” It was true. We had been spending more time apart than together; I knew things with us were going to be over sooner than later.

“I know. I’ve been with my family and friends mostly.” He shrugged. “So, you want to take off alone for a little while.” I heard the innuendo in his voice.

“You know what Ty, I don’t think so.” I rolled my eyes and stood up. I pulled on my boxers and headed into the house to get a bottle of water; it was really just my excuse to get away from him.

Walking back to my chair I noticed a couple of different things. Tyler was gone; not just from my chair, but no longer here all together. Emmett had Rosalie pinned to his chest in the pool; he was definitely taken with her. And I also noticed Alice looking at Jasper, who was sitting just a few chairs away from where she was sun bathing. I plopped down into my chair next to her.

“You slut” I whispered after watching Jasper and Alice’s silent conversation.

“What?” She looked at me innocently.

“You are completely ‘eye fucking’ him” I laughed.

“Shhh! And what if I am?” She shrugged.

“Don’t let big brother bust you!” I teased.

“He can go fuck himself” She threatened then giggled.

“Uh-huh...I think that’s what the red head is for” I whispered to her and we both busted out into

hysterics.

We stayed out by the pool until seven o'clock, and then we all headed in for dry clothes and to watch a movie. Most people had left. The remaining people were Alice, Rose, Emmett, Jasper, Edward, Victoria, Jacob, Seth, Eric, Ben and Angela, and I of course. After drying and changing we headed to the basement to claim a seat and watch a movie.

I claimed a seat on one couch, Rose was given no other alternative than to sit in the oversized chair with Emmett (he snatched her up before she could look around the room), Edward and Victoria had a spot across from me on a large bean bag seat for two, Alice was sitting on the love seat where Jasper conveniently sat next to her, and then Jake decided to sit next to me. I knew that this would not be a relaxing movie, since I would probably have to fight his wandering hands. Then I watched Eric take a seat between Alice's legs on the floor in front of her (I had to stifle a laugh at her situation). Angela sat on the other side of me with Ben on the floor laying his head on her leg (they were so cute together).

The movie started and it was halfway through when I thought that I would make it without having to fight Jake. That thought was short lived when his index finger started to graze the side of my knee; drawing circles. I pulled my knee away and looked at him with a scowl; he just smirked back. Then his hand happen to lie on top of mine; again I pulled away and crossed my arms over my chest sighing. I heard him chuckle. *He fucking thinks it's funny to molest me?! Ugh!*

I was trying to balance my attention between the movie and watching out for Jake when I glanced up to find Edward watching Jake and I intently with such a mean look. *What is his problem? It's not like I am asking Jake to grab at me, I'm trying to give him the hint. This big brother act is really too much; now I understand why Alice get's so annoyed.*

When the movie ended I told everyone good night and headed up to Alice's room. I changed into a pair of sleep shorts and a tank top and I climbed into bed. The slam of Alice's bedroom door woke me with surprise. I jolted up to see Alice leaning against her door with a guy plastered to her face. I looked to the clock beside her bed and it was almost two in the morning.

"Ugh! Alice can you wrap it up, so I can go back to sleep?" I moaned and threw myself back onto the pillow.

"Oh...umm, Bella, I'm sorry" I turned over to see Alice with Jasper lingering. *Holy Shit! She's making out with Jasper.* I grinned knowingly at her and she turned her head down shyly.

Then it dawned on me. "Uhhggggghhh" I huffed while standing up and dragging myself out the door. Before leaving I turned back to Alice who was about to be grabbed up by Jasper again. "Ahem!" She turned quickly to look at me. "You owe me for this, big time! Both of you!" I grabbed my iPod off her dresser next to me and shut her door heading to the spare room that Jasper should be sleeping in. I popped my iPod ear buds into my ears and climbed into the bed to get back to sleep. I passed out quickly.

EPOV

Walking into the house and hearing the music blaring was definitely like déjà vu. Emmett was the first to comment on how it brought back memories of our summer ‘get togethers’, so I immediately walked to the pool to inspect what my little sister was up to.

Once I was through the doors my attention was immediately on the thin, gorgeous, hot, brunette standing on the pool ladder. *Jesus Christ! She’s like a sister, she is like a sister. Fuck, then why had I been having ‘incestual’ thoughts about tearing that blue and white striped bikini off of her?* Then she looked up at us and Jacob fucking Black put his hands on her; pulling her over his shoulder. His hands were on her in places that they fucking pissed me off. I walked toward the pool with Victoria, Jasper and Emmett as Bella and Jacob went under the water together. When she broke through the surface of the water I couldn’t wipe the anger from my face, it was ridiculous for me to act like this. Then I had to watch her boyfriend grope all over her until she walked away from him.

After everyone was pretty much gone and we all settled down to watch a movie, I still had to watch Jacob paw at her. I could tell she was irritated, but why didn’t she fucking get up and sit somewhere else. She had glanced up at one point and I could tell that I had been caught watching the ‘situation’ with Jake. I think every time she saw me today I looked pissed off. When we were about to put in the second movie she said good night to everyone and headed off to bed. It took everything for me not to get up and follow after her. *What is with this pull toward her?* I had pulled Victoria into a tighter grip against me to keep me seated.

Before the end of the second movie Victoria had turned and said she was tired, so we said good night and headed to my room. I lay there next to her for an hour trying to use her slow steady breaths to fall asleep, but my head wouldn’t stop. When I closed my eyes and exhaustion took over I fell into a dream. Bella was walking toward me in that bikini. She straddled my lap and placed her lips to mine. I got instantly hard and she moaned while grinding into me. As she reached around behind her to untie her top I woke up panting heavily and sweating. I sat up with my feet on the floor trying to calm myself and noticed that I was at full mass and straining against my boxers. *Fuck!* I headed to the bathroom quietly to not wake Victoria, grabbing a pair of shorts and t-shirt on the way.

I jumped into the shower to calm down, but it wasn’t working. Every time I closed my eyes I saw her and my dick throbbed. I found myself grasping my dick and tugging up and down on it; thoughts of her going through my mind. The first time I saw her down at the beach dancing with Alice, her lying across me during the balloon fight, her at the pool, and my dream. “Fffuckk” I gasped as I released onto the shower wall. I rinsed off in the warm water before stepping out to get dried off and dressed.

There was no way I would be able to get to sleep; I knew that, so I headed for the kitchen. On the way I hesitated at the spare room door where Jasper was sleeping. I figured that I would wake his ass up and bother him for awhile. Maybe he could help me sort my shit out.

I opened the door not trying to be quiet, so I was surprised when Jasper didn’t move or wake up.

Then I decided to fuck with him. I got close to the lump that was under the blankets and hopped onto him.

“What the fuck!?!?!?” A girl’s voice screamed.

I pulled the blanket down quickly and saw Bella’s freaked out face underneath me. “What the...”

“I asked first!” She shouted while trying to push me off of her. “I can’t breathe Cullen, get up!”

“Oh uh...sorry.” Then it hit me. “Where the hell is Jasper at?” Bella’s face flashed anger to panic. I knew something was up.

Just then Alice came running in. “What is going on?” She looked between Bella and me half lying with each other on the bed.

“Where the fuck is Jasper, Alice?!” *If he is in your bed I will fucking kill him!* I jumped up off the bed and headed toward the door.

“I’m right here dude, what’s wrong?” Jasper appeared in the doorway and looked like he had been in bed, someone’s bed. He also looked too cool and calm.

“Where the fuck were you at?!” I shouted and glared at Alice; who looked like she was in panic.

“I was just down....” The next thing I knew Bella interrupted him.

“Jesus Edward, he went down to the kitchen. Lay off.” I turned to look at her.

“How the fuck would you know?” I interrogated her and raised my eyebrows.

“Because he asked me if I wanted anything before he got out of bed.” She looked at me fiercely and with conviction.

I was not prepared for that answer; I felt a knot in my stomach that twisted until I almost doubled over. “Jasper was in bed with you?” I choked out and then turned my attention to Jasper and Alice.

“Seriously Edward get out so I can go back to sleep” Bella blurted out quickly and I turned back to her; ready to vomit when I saw her stand up and walk across the room to Jasper and stand. She was wearing the tiniest boxer shorts and tank top. *Did she fucking shop in the little girls section, Fuck me!*

“Jasper, are you crazy? What about Maria, huh? Did you happen to mention her during your little ‘hook up’ with my sister’s best friend, who is like fucking family?!” I spat out at him.

“Actually he did mention her Edward. Why don’t you mind your own business and go back to bed, Please?” I could hear the real plea in her voice. She placed her hand to her forehead and

sighed heavily.

“Bella, you are family and you can’t seriously...” She cut me off. She stomped toward me and poked me in the chest. Even the poke sent a charge through my body.

“Edward Anthony Cullen, you DO NOT get to dictate what I can and can’t do. I am not your sister and I am not your responsibility!” She was pissed and she was even hotter when she was pissed. Hearing my full name come out of her mouth made my dick twitch again. *I am a sick bastard.* Then she seemed to calm down. “Seriously Edward, you are making more of this than there is, okay? I appreciate your concern, but it’s unnecessary. Nothing happened, we were talking and we fell asleep.”

I didn’t know what else to say. It still felt like there was something else that was being hidden from me, but I wasn’t going to get anymore from them I could tell. I sighed and ran my hand through my hair.

“Can I please go back to bed now?” She headed toward the bed and I grabbed her arm.

“You can go to Alice’s room Bella.” She turned and scowled at me.

“Fine!” She huffed and walked out. I followed her and Alice as they headed back to Alice’s room. I watched as they went into her room before I went back to mine. I was exhausted and fell into a dreamless sleep.

JPOV

I heard Edward yelling and knew that I had to make my appearance. What I wasn’t ready for was for Bella to take this all on herself. If only she knew that she made it a thousand times worse by doing that. I had watched Edward when he was around her. At first I believed that it was a ‘big brother’ attitude, but I knew him too well. It wasn’t brotherly love that had him protective of her and watching her. He was still denying it, but it would only be a matter of time before he finally fessed up to what he was feeling and either acted on it or got over it. I was leaning toward him acting on it.

I hadn’t told Alice about Maria either, so that was going to fuck me over big time now. I don’t know what I had been thinking, but I couldn’t stay away from her. Alice is just so...fuck...I don’t know what, but I can’t stay away from her. When that kid sat between her legs tonight while we watched movies I wanted to rip his fucking head off. I knew that it was the same kid that was all over her at the fire that one night on the beach.

Edward was not going to let this go. He had for now, but come tomorrow or the next time that we alone he was definitely going to interrogate me about Bella. With the way he is feeling about her, I know that it would have been easier to deal with explaining Alice. *Shit!!!! Fuck!!! Damn!!* Bella hadn’t known that, I mean how could she? But I was screwed. Alice would hate me for Maria and Edward would be pissed off at me for something I didn’t do with Bella. Hell I hadn’t even done anything with Alice except make out and sleep next to her.

Yep, I was fucking screwed!

#####

Chapter: 7

A/N: Okay it's a short chapter, but I needed to end it where it was. The next chapter will be up in a day or two. Thanks to all my reviewers!!! I truly appreciate all of them!

Chapter 7 – Crushing

BPOV

“Bella?!” Alice grabbed me as soon as we entered her room. I turned to see her shocked face.

“Al, there is nothing to say. You would do the same for me if it was the other way around.” She smiled and I hugged her. “Now please let me get back to sleep.” I threw myself onto her bed.

“Umm...Bella?” She was almost whispering as he sat on the bed next to me.

“What now?” I groaned and turned my head to look at her.

“Did you see how Edward reacted?” She wouldn’t look at me when I was nodding.

“Yeah” I said aloud. “His big brother routine gets old doesn’t it?” I chuckled. “You can thank me tomorrow.” I rolled back over and closed my eyes; letting the sleep I desired take me back over.

APOV

Bella had rolled back over and started to fall back asleep. I couldn’t sleep though; everything still swirling around my head was making me dizzy.

When Bella first spoke up and took the whole situation on herself I felt relief wash over me. However, I what I wasn’t expecting was Edward’s face. He didn’t just look angry about it; he looked hurt. I had shrugged it off as him being his overly protective brother style, but then as he went on and I watched his face closely it occurred that it was something else. He seemed to be almost spiteful of Jasper and Bella. Something else is up with my big brother.

Then there is Maria. Who the hell is Maria? Jasper never mentioned anyone the whole time that we talked. Was she his girlfriend? I mean, he could have at least told me about her if that is what she is. I don’t know what to think now.

I finally lay down on the bed looking to see that it was three in the morning before I closed my eyes. That was the last thing that I remembered.

BPOV

I rolled over and stretched out hearing Alice's deep breathing next to me. I looked over to the clock; it was almost noon. I headed to the bathroom quietly and then headed downstairs in my running gear.

Walking to the front door I heard a loud noise in the kitchen. I rushed over and saw a pitcher and orange juice at Edward's feet. I tried not to, but I failed, and busted out into loud roars of laughter. His head snapped up to me and I covered my mouth trying to stifle it.

"I guess it is kind of funny" He chuckled and ran his hand through that glorious sex hair that he always has.

"More than kind of" I laughed. "Are you okay?" He nodded. "Do you need any help?"

"No" he shook his head. "Thanks though."

"Alrighty then" I turned to leave.

"Bella?" I twirled back around. "Umm...I'm sorry for freaking out on you last night. It's just that..."

"Don't worry about it, I get it. It's the brotherly instinct" I shrugged "but you have to remember that I am not your sister and that I am almost eighteen. Oh and by the way, if you hadn't noticed, so is your sister." I winked, giggled and started back toward the door.

"Are you leaving?" I spun around again and I couldn't read the expression on his face.

"No, just going to run. I try to do it at least every other day."

"Do you want some company?"

"Umm..sure. I guess."

"If you don't then it's fine. I understand." He was now throwing the pitcher in the sink and putting towels down to soak up the juice.

"It's not that. I just typically run alone and I have my iPod in, so I'm not great company for conversation or anything." I didn't want to hurt his feelings, but it would be a little strange to run with anyone; especially with him and after last night.

"I don't mind. I grab mine as well." He smiled at me and threw the orange juice soaked towels in

the sink. "I'll be right back, if you don't mind?"

"Umm..sure." I wasn't really sure about it. I figured after last night that I wouldn't be someone he was trying to 'hang' with. If this is some brotherly bonding moment where he is going to lecture me about older guys aka Jasper, then he was going to be surprised when I tripped his ass while he ran.

Five long minutes later he appeared at the front door in shorts, t-shirt, and running shoes. "Ready?" I asked him. He nodded. "Good, cause you take longer than a girl to get ready." I teased and walked out the door.

We started off slow until we figured out each other's pace and then it picked up. Nothing was spoken as we both had our iPods on. We just ran, side by side. On the return to the house Edward decided to pick up his pace. I picked up mine. Then he picked up his again. I knew what he was doing and when I saw the smirk on his face I started sprinting. Before he could catch on, I had put a good ten feet between us. I was about three sprints from the Cullen's yard when I felt him gaining on me and quickly confirmed by glancing over my shoulder. I put everything I had into it, but when I hit the yard Edward smacked into my side tangling our feet together and sending me face forward. I put my hands out to brace the fall, but instead I landed on my side and not on the ground.

I rolled over to see that Edward had wrapped his arms around my waist and flipped me so that I fell onto him. "Are you okay?" I asked him quickly getting up on my knees next to him.

He nodded. "Y-yea...I think so" he struggled. He had the wind knocked out of him.

"Do you think you can get up? Or should I go get Jasper?" His face quickly hardened; it looked like anger, then hurt, then determination.

"I can get up" he spit out as he tried to stand. I reached for his arm and helped him up. That damn spark shocked the palm of my hand. As soon as he was on his feet I let go.

"Can you walk?" He nodded, so we headed inside.

We entered the kitchen and found Alice, Jasper, and Victoria sitting at the breakfast bar eating eggs and toast. Victoria stood up quickly.

"Baby, are you okay?" She rushed to Edward's side. I moved out of the way and went to stand by Alice who was eyeing me curiously.

"Yeah, yeah, I'm fine. Just had a collision that's all." He looked at me; I blushed and turned to get some food. "I'm just going to head upstairs and get a shower."

"Let me help you." Victoria wrapped her arm around his waist and helped guide him upstairs.

Once they were gone I looked up to see Jasper and Alice both staring at me. "What?" I asked

over my glass of juice.

“Pray tell Miss Swan, what happened with you and Edward?” Alice wiggled her eyebrows.

“Eww, Alice, he wanted to run today. So he went with me.” I shrugged. “He tried to race me and we ended colliding in your yard and tripped over each other, which was his fault by the way.” I picked up my fork and started eating my eggs. I could feel their glances still on me.

“Uh huh” Alice said.

“Uh huh” Jasper said.

“Oh Jesus you two, what now?” I put my hands palms down on each side of my plate.

“Well Edward hasn’t gone for a run in forever. I didn’t think he did it anymore.” Alice stood sipping coffee, leaning against the counter, and she seemed to be deep in thought about her statement.

“Not that I know of either” Jasper added. “He did when he first got to school, but fell out of the habit.”

“So what?” I said and went back to my breakfast. They both seemed to have a silent conversation between each other. I finished eating quickly so I could escape the force that was now Alice and Jasper.

I rinsed my plate and began to walk away when Alice stopped me. “You know Bella. I think my brother has a crush on you.” I turned, with a face that was completely astounded. “I’m serious” she giggled.

“Shut the hell up Alice. That’s not even funny!” I spit at her lame attempt to joke. “Don’t say stuff like that, what if Victoria heard you?!”

“I’m not joking Bells” she looked at me with a serious face.

Then Jasper decided to join in on the ‘make Bella look like an asshole’ team. “Bella I hate to tell you, but I see it to. I don’t know how you don’t to be honest.”

Shock doesn’t even cover the way I felt, but anger is what came out. “Shut up, both of you, Edward treats me like I am Alice and that’s it. Now if you both want to continue to make up stupid crappy rumors about people then maybe I’ll just have to go spread the word about last night.” I eyed them both as their faces dropped to look down at the floor. Now Alice damn well knew I wouldn’t do it, but I threatened her anyway. “That’s better! I’m going to get a shower.”

A few weeks passed and Edward, Victoria, and Jasper had gone back to Seattle. I had helped arrange a ‘get together’ for Alice and Jasper before they left. Ever since Edward had mentioned Maria, Alice really avoided him and I could tell that both of them were miserable. So I pulled an

Alice, with the help of Rose, and we got them alone to talk.

Maria was indeed Jaspers current girlfriend and Alice was slightly sad and a little more pissed off. She agreed to be friends with him, but she wasn't going to be some 'on the side high school hook up' for him (her words, not mine). Jasper had reluctantly agreed to keep it as friends; though I could read the hurt expression on his face every time he looked at her. You could see him physically restrain himself from touching her.

Alice, Rose, and I made plans for the remainder of the summer. A couple of beach parties, some shopping trips, a weekend camping get away down at the camp ground, and I still had some projects to work on before returning to school. We were all amazed at how quickly the summer was going; our last summer before Rose left us.

I was spending the afternoon watching Marie while Sam took Leah out for some much needed alone time. Alice came down and rushed through the door. "Bella?!" she was out of breath.

I sat up quickly on the couch. "What Alice? Is everything okay?"

"Well, sort of, umm...I have to tell you something though." She looked nervous.

"What Al? What's wrong?!" She was starting to panic me now.

"It's, umm, it's Tyler. " I didn't know how she said it all in one breath, but it was impressive.

"What?"

"I saw Tyler making out on the board walk in Port Angeles today while I was shopping, I said."

"Oh."

"That's it? Oh?" She looked furious with me.

"Well...I mean, we haven't been talking or hanging out really at all. I guess I should've expected it to happen." She was looking at me like I was an idiot. "What? It's not all his fault Alice and you know it."

"Isabella Marie Swan! It's not a matter of fault. It's the fact that he went behind your back instead of breaking it off with you first!" She was right.

"That Asshole!"

"That's more like it Swan!" She nodded her head once in approval. "Now what are we going to do about it?"

We sat down and decided that I would simply call him, because seeing his face would make me punch him. So I called and ended it with Tyler. I was pissed and told him off, because he was an

asshole for going behind my back.

After hanging up Alice picked up her phone and looked at me while she was doing it. “You know what this means right?”

In unison “Fuck Men Night!”

“Rose its Alice” she spoke into her phone and told Rose what happened with Tyler. “So you know what that means this weekend. YEP!” She laughed. “Meet us at my house tomorrow afternoon so we can get ready.” With that, she hung up.

#####

Chapter: 8

Chapter 8 – Fuck Men

I woke up Thursday morning around nine at Leah and Sam’s place to the sound of Marie crying and Leah clanging around the kitchen. I stretched and groggily headed into the kitchen.

“Morning” Leah hadn’t seen me and she jumped.

“Sheesh, Bella, I didn’t hear you coming” she half giggled. Marie was crying in her arms and Leah was trying to get a bottle warmed up for her.

“You need some help?” I reached for Marie and started walking her around patting her bottom.

“Thanks Bells. Sam had to get to work early this morning and I didn’t want to wake you after you stayed so long for us yesterday with Marie.” She smiled as she finished getting the bottle ready and walked over and took Marie to feed her.

“It was no big deal; you know I absolutely love watching her.” I yawned out.

“Do you want something to eat?” Leah asked without looking up.

“Nah. I have to meet Alice and Rose in a couple of hours, so I better get going.” The thought of Tyler and breaking up started to really sink back in and my voice was reflecting that.

“You okay?” I nodded to answer Leah’s question, but I told her about what happened last night. “Oh, Bella, you should’ve called me. We could have come home earlier and...”

I cut her off. “Lee, I would never have done that. Yeah, it hurts a little, but it’s not like it was the

love of my life crushing me. Tyler was a great friend and we cared about each other, well at least he used to care about me. I guess that's what hurts the most; he didn't care to talk to me before....UGH! I don't even want to talk about it anymore." I side smiled at her. "It will all be dealt with Saturday." I smirked.

"Ahhh...." Leah caught on; she had taken part in many of our 'man hater nights' after different break ups. "So it's one of those nights." She laughed. "Well, just remember that I am not far away, so if you need me call me."

I got up and hugged her tightly, kissed Marie on the head and headed home.

I was taking my last step onto Alice's balcony from the tree house when I overheard Rose's voice. "So that fucker was making out with Heidi?! Eww!"

"Quit discussing my personal life without me tramps!" I shouted as I walked into Alice's room.

Alice spun around on her bed smiling. "It's about time you got over here!" I rolled my eyes.

"Al, I'm early. You told Rose afternoon and it's only a little past eleven." I sat down at her computer desk and started messing around with her new monitors that we had gotten for her.

"Step away from the computer super geek" Rose came over to pull me away by my arm. "We have plans to make for tomorrow night." You could hear the eagerness in her voice. Rose loved these nights.

I yanked my arm away. "I have a lot of work to do in order to get this all working correctly, so just cut me some slack Rose." I resumed looking over Alice's computer configurations.

"Besides, you guys always plan all this out and I just show up. It's the way we roll." I smiled widely at them, knowing that they would just shake their heads and laugh.

"Leave Gates over there to do her thing" Alice chimed in. "Besides, I can't wait for those touch screens to be set up with the new program she set up for me." She grinned at me widely before her and Rose sat together on the bed and discussed Friday night.

I spent Thursday night at home with Dad, Sue, and Rose. They had complained about not seeing much of us and that we needed to spend time together before Rose left for college. Rose and I had agreed with them.

After dinner Rose and I sat in our room doing our own thing. Rose was reading over some car magazines and I was on my computer working on Alice's fashion program that I promised to have done by the end of the summer. Al was going into fashion design and merchandising, so the program that I was putting together gave her the ability to design electronically; being able to enter measurements, textiles, textures, shapes, etc. I knew that Alice was going to be famous. It was inevitable; she is definitely that person that you knew she was destined for it. Looking at Rose you would think that she was destined to be the hottest model and/or actress. However, Rose was an enigma. She knew she was attractive, but she also knew that she was ridiculously

smart. Mechanics were her thing. She could rebuild an engine; hell she could build a car if she wanted to. She also loved the shock that came across people's faces when they became aware of just how smart she was about cars and anything mechanical. She was going to major in Mechanical Engineering and I would love to be there the first time her professors and fellow students got to soak in her looks before hearing her ramble out the mechanical aspects of some piece of machinery. Just the thought made me smile.

"What are you smiling about? Did you hack the national treasurer?" Rose giggled.

"Har-har-har. I was just thinking about the first time you enter a mechanics class full of testosterone and then blow their minds with your intellect." I smirked and she smiled huge. We discussed her dorm arrangements and college a little as we both got ready for bed.

Most of Friday was spent gathering things that Alice thought we would need for tonight. Rose was in charge of music, I was in charge of food and drinks, and Alice, yeah well, Alice was in charge of everything else.

Alice had headed down to the beach before Rose and me. When we arrived we saw that she had wood already piled in a fire pit and she had four tiki torches set up. I shook my head. "Jesus Christ" Rose sighed out in disbelief. "You would think that by now I would be used to her, but sometimes she still just..."

"Freaks you out?" I smirked at Rose.

"Yeah!" She laughed.

"She could take over the world, I'm telling you." I grabbed the blankets and the cooler heading toward Alice.

As soon as my toes touched the sand I felt the night begin. It was time for frustration, anger, hurt, and everything to be released. Though we reserved these nights for bad break-ups mostly, we also used them as stress relievers as well. They were sort of 'girls only' bonding sessions; it was empowering.

"Finally!" Alice shouted as she ran up and grabbed the cooler from me. "What took so long? I was gonna start without you."

"Well, since I'm the one who got cheated on I would like to thank you for waiting on me." I laid on as much sarcasm as I could and chuckled.

We were all sitting around on blankets with our legs crossed listening to a random playlist that Rose had put together while eating some sandwiches that Esme had made for us before we started the 'ritual' of the evening. Alice was digging through the cooler for a drink when she blurted out "Bella, I love you so much!"

I looked up at her smiling. I knew she had found the vodka. "What did she get?" Rose questioned

trying to peek over Al's shoulder. Alice sat back with three different bottles; blueberry vodka, watermelon vodka, and raspberry vodka. One of each of our personal favorites: watermelon was Alice, raspberry was Rose, and blueberry was mine. Rose smiled at me appreciatively.

Alice grabbed the traditional cups (pilsner cups that have rainbow light up effects at the bottom), filled them with ice and each of our preferred vodka. After passing the drinks out to us we gave our toast.

"Here's to the men we love, Here's to the men who love us, Here's to the men that we love that don't love us; FUCK THE MEN LET'S DRINK TO US!" We said in unison and then started giggling.

From that point on it became a man trashing contest. Trash talk about past boyfriends, jokes about guys, and anything that was bad about men. We joked, we got mad, we screamed, and we laughed. We laughed a lot.

"Okay, okay..." Alice broke up our hysterics. "It's dedication time." She smiled and pulled out her iPod. I grabbed mine. "Okay, Rose you first." Dedication time was where we each took turns choosing songs that we had picked to display our mood for the evening.

"Alright, first song is...drum roll please..." Rose stood up and we followed suit, making a drum roll sound as we did so. "Loser, by Saving Jane" she plugged her iPod into the radio and started it. We laughed and started dancing around wildly singing the words loudly.

The song ended and Alice was up next. "Okay, my first song, Don't Bother by Shakira." I saw a gleam in Al's eye and knew this one was going out to Jasper. She plugged in and hit play. Dancing around and singing began.

"Okay, my first song for the night..." I smiled since it was one of my favorites. "You Oughta Know by Alanis Morissette." Rose smiled. We all sang very very loudly to this one. We collapsed to the ground when it was over and poured another drink. We each sat lazily drinking in silence before we started the second round of 'dedications'.

Alice spoke up first. "Okay, song two..." She stood and we stood with her. "Smile by Adele" she hit play and we all danced around singing. Rose's second choice was 'Caught out There' by Kelis. My third choice was 'I Can Do Better' by Avril Lavigne.

By the time we got to the end of our 'Fuck the Men' night we were extremely drunk, loud, and barely able to walk. I sat up to take one last drink and play the 'last song'. It was tradition that the last song was always 'A Toast to Men' by Willa Ford. The song started and we all sang each word loudly and laughed loudly.

EPOV

"I can't believe that we are already driving back to Forks dude." Emmett grumbled from the passenger seat of the truck.

“Look Mom is giving us the leather couches from the basement, along with some other stuff like the flat screen television in the basement for the new place. So suck it up.” I shot back at him. He straightened up.

“I guess it’s worth it, but still couldn’t we do it another weekend?”

“You have practice starting up again. This is the best time to do it.” I rolled my eyes at him. He was whining worse than a girl.

“Fine.” Em huffed and then he sighed. “So what’s up with you and that Victoria girl? I haven’t seen her for awhile.” Emmett had his head thrown back onto the seat with his right foot up on the dash of the rented truck.

“Nothing.” I shrugged.

“Yeah. So did you drop her or did she drop you?” He smirked.

“It just wasn’t working out between us. We were just too different.” I shrugged again.

“So you got tired of another girl and moved on, again...” He chuckled.

“Fuck you. I don’t see you settling down my man-whore of a friend” I shot back.

“Dude, I don’t make them my girlfriend knowing that I am going to get tired of them and have to go through all that ‘it’s not you, it’s me’ bullshit” he laughed “You are a glutton for punishment man.”

“So what, I shouldn’t even attempt? I should just tell them that I want them to fuck me and then leave?” I cocked my eyebrow at him.

“That is so not....okay, well I have done that, but that’s not what I am saying. I don’t make any promise I can’t keep dude. I tell them up front that I don’t want anything serious and that it is just hanging out for fun. If they can’t handle that then that is their choice. I don’t lie to anyone.” He was being smug now.

“I don’t lie to them.” I spit at him.

“Dude, you lie to yourself!” I was going to counter him but he stopped me. “Can you pull over somewhere soon so I can eat? I am starving.”

We finally arrived to my parent’s house late Friday afternoon. After loading up the truck with the furniture we sat down to eat some sandwiches that my mom had made for us.

“Mom, where’s Al? I haven’t seen or heard her since I’ve been here.” I leaned over my plate and took a large bite.

“Oh the girls went down to LaPush to the beach.” She had a small smile on her face when she said it.

“Is there a beach par...fire there tonight?” Emmett asked with his mouth full. I slapped his arm and my mom chuckled at us.

“I don’t know for sure, but I don’t think so.” She started cleaning up the kitchen.

“So they are just on the beach while it’s getting dark? Shouldn’t they be heading back by now?” I questioned.

“Edward” Mom turned and gave me a stern look. “Leave your sister alone. She is going to be eighteen and it’s only the LaPush beach. Charlie has the officer’s patrol down there all the time, even with your parties that you guys always have down there.” Damn, mom knew about the parties. I should’ve suspected as much, she’s too fucking smart.

“Alright, alright.” I hunched my shoulders forward in defeat. Em raised an eyebrow at me as my mom walked out of the room. I turned to him. “Oh don’t worry; I’m checking that shit out as soon as we can get away without my mom being suspicious.” I grinned.

Emmett chuckled. “Dude you are hilarious! I think that you are going to sleep between Alice and her husband when she goes on her honeymoon!” He laughed so loud that I had to cover my ear that he was next to.

After cleaning up from eating and coming up with the excuse that I was taking Em over to his house for a little while to hang out; we borrowed my dad’s car and headed to LaPush.

We pulled up to the parking area at the beach and parked beside Alice’s car. Stepping out of the car we could hear the music and the fire from where we stood. Em and I started heading toward them but were stopped by a voice.

“I would stay here if I were you.” Em and I turned to see Leah sitting on the hood of Bella’s truck.

“What?” Emmett asked her as we walked over to her.

“I said I would stay away if I were you.” She smiled.

“Why is that?” I asked her looking back to the fire seeing that it was just the three of them singing and dancing around the fire.

“Well this is a ‘girl’ night so to say. It’s sort of a tradition after a break-up or a really bad time in one of our lives.” Leah’s eyes stayed on the girls while she spoke.

“So why are you up here and not down there?” Em asked.

“I only came over to check and make sure they were okay. I have to get back to Marie and Sam; though I will be back again to check before I go to bed. There is a chance of rain and I don’t want them to attempt to drive after all the drinking that goes down.” She jumped off the truck and was about to turn to go when I stopped her.

“Leah, is Al okay? I mean you said that these nights are because of...” she stopped me.

“No, no, it’s not Alice. Bella and Tyler broke up, he cheated on her, so it’s her ‘girl’ night.” She seemed to be searching my face for something; I wasn’t sure what. *How could he cheat on her though? I mean is he stupid.*

“Oh” was the stupidest answer, but it’s all I could think to say in response.

“I would stay away. They get pretty brutal on men during these nights.” She laughed as if she was remembering when she was down there.

“Leah” It was Em that stopped her this time. “We will keep an eye on them okay, if need be I’ll crash down here with them to make sure nothing happens. Or I’ll take them back to Edward’s parents.”

“Thanks Emmett” Leah waved and left.

Em and I both sat down on the edge of the sand and watched the girls dance, laugh, and sing. They were clearly drunk, but also hilarious to watch. I looked over to see Em with a new look on his face and followed it directly to every motion that Rose made.

“Uh hem” I cleared my throat and laughed.

“What?” he snapped out at me.

“Oh nothing, ‘Mr. I don’t make them girlfriends’.” I chuckled. It had become very clear what the look on his face was after he watched Rosalie.

“You don’t know what you are talking about.” He said with a little too much conviction.

“Are you trying to convince me or yourself of that?” I laughed again.

“Shut the fuck up dude! She is just hot...that’s all.” He shrugged.

“Yeah, yeah, yeah.” I shook my head. “You know it’s not a bad thing Em; to actually be with one person and not a bunch of different girls.” I kept my eyes on the girls who were winding down but still laughing.

Emmett was silent for awhile before he said anything. “You should consider that advice yourself dear Eddie-boy.” I laughed lightly.

Then it went silent. The laughing has stopped and so did the music. Em and I walked slowly toward the fire seeing that they had all curled up and fell asleep.

“Hmmm...do we take them back or leave them here?” Emmett looked at me.

“I honestly am not sure what to do.” I looked at him then back to the girls.

“Well I’m thinking that we should probably get them to your house” Em spoke as he knelt down to Rose and lifted her up.

“Okay...then let’s...” just then I heard a low rumble and looked to the sky to see that dark clouds had rolled in over the water. “I guess we should get moving, just in case that hits soon.” I turned to see Em caring Rose back toward my car.

I started packing up their stuff as Em walked back. He put out the fire and picked up Bella. The moment he had her in his arms I felt that damn twinge in my stomach again. I pushed it aside and picked Alice up carrying her to her car. After heading back to get all their things and throw them into Alice’s car; Em drove Alice’s car and I drove my car back to the house.

We got back to my house and Alice emerged on her own from the car. Emmett was trying to get her to let him help, but she just kept telling him to fuck off and stumbled into the house. I couldn’t hold back my laugh, even after Em shot me a nasty glare. I opened the back door of my car and saw Rose . Em rushed up quickly to me.

“I got her.” He said and grabbed her before I could protest, if I had wanted to. If I was going to be honest with him and myself; I knew that getting Bella into my arms, if only to feel that spark for a small minute, was what I was hoping for. I went around my car and retrieved Bella; cradling her in my arms. Her head rolled to rest on my shoulder and I could smell her; it was invigorating. I inhaled deep, shook it off and walked her to Alice’s room.

Rose and Em weren’t in Al’s room when I lay Bella down by Alice. I couldn’t help but slide my fingers over her cheek and jaw before leaving them to sleep. As I touched her the spark seemed to gain a stronger charge as I moved against her skin.

I walked to the spare room that Em was sleeping in tonight and saw him lying on the bed with Rose in his arms. He had his face buried in her hair and his arm around her tightly; holding her as close as he could get her. I didn’t say a word I walked away with a strange feeling and looking at my fingers that were still tingling. I knew then the feeling that I was having toward Em and Rose.

Jealousy.

#####

#####

Chapter: 9

Chapter 9 – Bella Gates

EPOV

Sleep did not come easy last night and I was up earlier than I would have liked. I got up showered and headed to the kitchen for coffee. When I entered my dad was sitting next to my mother drinking coffee and talking between the two of them. They were really the ideal couple to mirror your relationship after; though, I didn't know if I could really find that with someone. It seemed that after a month or a few months that my relationships always flat-lined.

"Good morning" my mother smiled brightly. "Did you sleep well?"

I pulled the mug down from the cabinet and poured the coffee into it before answering. "I guess." I shrugged.

"Do you want some breakfast?" She stood and headed to the refrigerator.

"No, don't worry about it. I can cook for myself. Sit down and relax." I leaned over to her and kissed her cheek.

"Non-sense, the girls will be hungry this morning after their late night..."

"If they aren't too hung over" Carlisle chuckled as he looked at the paper. I laughed.

"Well, at least Bella will eat. She's out running now and always comes back ready to eat, especially when I make my strawberry pancakes." Mom rebutted and reached for all the ingredients.

Bella was out running? Damn I should've gotten up earlier. I know she is still underage, but that would be forever and what is the harm in being friends with her? Even if half the time I wanted to strip her of her clothes and mark her as mine.

"Hello...Edward??" Dad was waving his hands at me.

"Huh?"

"We lost you there for a second didn't we?" He laughed. I smiled sheepishly and took another sip of coffee. "I was wondering if you could take a look at my laptop for me. I've tried everything but I can't figure out why it keeps locking up when I try to access the hospital database."

“Sure.” I followed him to his office where there were a sea of folders, case files, and papers all over his desk and chairs. “Jesus Dad, I’m surprised that mom hasn’t killed you for this mess.” I sat down at the desk, placed my coffee on his desk, and started checking over his computer.

After about twenty minutes I sighed and sat back frustrated. “No luck?” Dad asked. I shook my head.

“Maybe you should call your IT person at the hospital. I think it’s probably something to do with the hospital database.” I pushed back from the desk.

“I put a call in this morning, but no return call yet.” He huffed. “I was hoping to work on a couple of things this morning and get them out of the way, but that’s alright. What time are you guys heading back today; will you be around for dinner?”

Just as I was about to answer when mom appeared in the doorway, “So get it all taken care of?” She smiled as if she already knew that we hadn’t. We both shook our head.

“Then it’s probably good that I have summoned reinforcements.” She smiled as she walked into the room and wrapped her arms around my father.

“Reinforcements?” I raised my eyebrow.

“Yep.” She winked at me then at my dad.

“Esme, what reinforcements...” Dad was cut off by Bella’s appearance in the door way. She came to a stop as soon as she saw that we were all looking at her. “Ah! Reinforcements! Esme you’re a genius!” He kissed her head then walked over to Bella explaining the problems that he was having.

“Bella is the ‘reinforcement’?” I was confused. Esme chuckled and shooed me out of the desk chair.

Bella sat down and started going through the same things that I had already done. “I already did all that. It won’t work.” I wasn’t stupid when it came to computers. I knew the basics to go through. Bella looked up at me and smirked.

“Okay, so tell me what you already did then?” She cocked one eyebrow at me.

I told her what I had already done. “I told him to just wait for his IT department to call.” I smiled at her.

“Okay” That was all she said and then she went back to work on the computer. I glanced to my mother who was eyeing me and holding in laughter. I was missing something. “Give me two minutes, I’ll be right back.” Bella spoke as she got up and headed for the door then she turned. “I need to get something from my house and then I should have you back up and running in no time.” She looked at me and smirked then headed out.

“Someone tell me what I am missing?” I looked straight at my mother who was smiling.

“Oh honey, have you forgotten everything from when you were living here?” She chuckled.

My father spoke next. “Bella is like a computer genius. She already does amazing things for the school and local companies.”

As he finished Bella walked back in with another laptop and a small box in her hands. She sat down plugged her laptop and the small box into Carlisle’s and then looked up at us. “Give me about fifteen minutes to run some diagnostics then, if I’m right, you will be back online.” She smiled and then put her head back down while her fingers graced the keys.

“I’m going to go start the pancakes.” Mom announced as she left the room.

I couldn’t take my eyes off of her fingers as they moved across the keys. They were so swift and determined, and the look on her face was pure determination.

“What’s going on?” Alice grumbled as she walked in and plopped down in one of the chairs.

“Bella is rescuing my computer this morning” Carlisle smiled and took another sip of coffee.

“Uh-huh” Alice yawned. “Leave it to Gates over there to be all ‘computer geeked’ all ready.” She laughed lightly, but stopped quickly when she saw Bella scowling at her.

“Maybe I’ll just forget to work on your stuff today there little miss smarty pants” I watched her smile at Alice and I wanted to lick her lips.

Alice shot her a look of pretend horror. “Oh please Bella...don’t, please don’t make me live any longer without my touch screens and new programming.” Alice had the back of her hand on her forehead and pretended to faint in the chair. I was laughing.

Bella was trying not to laugh. “Carlisle cover your ears” Bella ordered. “Look Tramp, I’m not doing anything for you ever again.” She winked at Alice and went back to the laptops in front of her.

“Okay Alice, leave her alone so she can fix my computer.” Dad shooed Alice out.

“Fine, I’ll just go talk to my one and only best friend...ROSE!” Alice giggled.

“She can have you! I’m not friends with sluts!” Bella shouted back and then turned quickly to Carlisle. “Sorry” she blushed. *God could she get any fucking cuter?!*

“It’s fine Bella. I’m well aware of how you girls talk to each other.” He chuckled and went to stand next to Bella watching her.

About ten minutes had passed. "Okay. You are ready to go." She stood and unplugged everything while gathering up her computer and the small box."

"You are truly a lifesaver Bella, thank you." Dad smiled as he sat down to his computer.

"No problem, though tell your IT people that they need to amp up the remote security. It was too easy to hack into it, but don't tell them I hacked it." She winked and walked out of the room.

"Did you seriously just hack into the hospital Swan?" She flipped her head around quickly, clearly not expecting me to be following her.

"Um, yeah." She blushed and started walking again. I continued to follow her into Alice's room. I could hear the shower running which was probably Alice.

Bella walked out on the balcony and started to climb over to the tree house. "You leaving?" I asked leaning on the balcony railing.

She turned quickly again. "Uh, I just have to take my stuff back." She stood there looking at me curiously. I'm sure she was wondering the same thing that I was wondering myself. *What the fuck am I doing?*

"Do you mind?" I asked as I followed her.

"Uh..." She stammered.

"I'm curious about your computer skills." I was about two inches from her and she took a step back from me.

"Uh...sure." She turned, but looked back at me again with the same curious expression on her face.

We entered her room and it looked like a normal room until my eyes fell on a corner desk that Bella walked behind. "What the hell is all of that?" There were about four flat screen monitors, two key boards, a ton of computer pieces and equipment, printers, wires, laptops, etc.

"This is all my computer stuff." She blushed. "Why are you so curious about it anyways?" She placed her stuff down on the desk and walked back around toward me.

"I dunno. I guess I just got curious after watching you this morning. Mom said you were like a computer genius, but I didn't realize that you were a hacker." I winked at her.

"I only did that to help your dad. I don't hack into stuff." She narrowed her eyes at me and then headed back toward the balcony. "At least as far as you know" She looked back at me smirking; then climbed to the tree house to head back to Alice's room. I followed.

Walking back into Alice's room I received curious looks from Alice and Rose. *I see Emmett*

finally let her go. “What?”

“Where were you two?” Alice said in a ‘sitting-in-a-tree’ voice.

“I was checking out the hacker’s computer set up. It’s impressive.” I shrugged.

Rose snorted. “Yeah, try living in the same room with Gates and all her beeps and fans blowing.” Rose laughed and Bella climbed on the bed with Rose tossing a pillow at her.

“Gates?” I asked curiously. I was wondering exactly what the nickname was regarding.

“You know, Bill Gates?” Alice rolled her eyed.

“Ah” I said.

“Well, mom should have the pancakes ready by now, so let’s go.” Alice announced. Rose grumbled and pulled herself up, clearly still hung over. Bella smiled and started toward the door, following Alice.

BPOV

To say that I was surprised when Edward was following me would be a complete understatement. Then when he wanted to ‘check out’ my computer stuff it seemed to get even more awkward. I couldn’t read his face to see if he was mocking me or was truly curious, so I just went with it.

Leave it to Alice to make the situation more uncomfortable with her innuendo when we returned to her room. However, after she announced pancakes I was more than happy to leave the room. I loved Esme’s pancakes.

We all had grabbed a plate and sat down. Alice was sitting between Rose and me at the breakfast bar. Emmett was sitting next to Rose and I heard the chair next to me when Edward sat down. Esme placed the pancakes out.

“Oh God Esme, your strawberry pancakes are by far the most wonderful thing to happen to me so far today.” I smiled at her and she smiled back.

“I know how much you love them.” She turned around to finish cooking the rest.

“They are pretty damn good” Edward whispered to me. I turned and nodded in agreement. But then he whispered even lower “But, I can definitely think of something else that was the most wonderful thing to happen to me this morning, or rather some one.” I almost choked. *Was he flirting with me? Edward? My best friend’s brother, Edward? I don’t even know what to say right now, so I will just pretend it didn’t happen. Holy Shit!*

Out of the corner of my eye I could see him smiling at me, but I refused to look at him. If I did I

knew I would definitely choke on my pancakes. Instead I turned my attention to Alice and Rose's conversation, pretending that I didn't hear him.

I was doing well until I felt his leg bump into mine as he was standing up, though it felt like his leg lingered against mine a little longer than it normally would have. Maybe it was just my imagination. Regardless, this time the skin contact made me turn to him; the damn electricity that raged from his skin was ridiculous. I looked at him and he gave me a crooked grin. *Jesus Christ, I want to lick his teeth! What? Wait....no...bad Bella. Alice's brother. You grew up around him. You're like his little sister. Yeah, but then why did it seem like he was flirting if he thought I was his little sister? Ugh! Fucking men!*

Luckily Alice broke up my mental rant. "So Edward, when are you and Emmett done stealing all of the furniture from the basement and heading back?" She smirked at him.

"We are going to leave after lunch so we can try to get back before it gets too late." He answered her ignoring her comments about the furniture.

"Oh, I was hoping that you would be here for dinner." Esme pouted at him.

"I'm sorry, but I prefer not to drive all night." He shrugged.

I stood up and took my plate to the sink and then headed up to Alice's room. Once I was there I grabbed my clothes up from the night before and carried them over to my house. While I was at home I checked some email and then got a shower and got dressed. When I was about to climb back out to the tree house Edward was sitting on Alice's balcony with her, Rose, and Em. He was looking at me intently, which was making me nervous. I walked over and sat by Rose.

"So, who is going to take me to get my car from LaPush?" I looked directly at Alice.

She smiled. "Sure Bella, let me just...."

"I can take you if you want?" Alice and I both snapped our head over to Edward.

"Um..." I looked to Alice to save me; figuring that she would just take me still. No such luck.

"Sure, Bella you don't mind do you?" She smiled at me and then winked so only I could see her.

I was stuck. "Sure...ok."

"Give me a minute to grab my shoes out of my room." Edward stood and walked away quickly.

I pulled Alice into her room. "What the hell?" I scowled at her.

"What?" she asked a little too innocently.

"I saw that look on your face, what are you up to?" I crossed my arms over my chest.

“Well...two things.” She smiled.

“And they are...and hurry up before he gets back.” I whispered harshly.

“Okay so I can call Jaz back. He called me last night and I haven’t been able to talk to him. If Edward is gone it will be easier.” She smiled.

“You said two things Alice!” I was getting irritated.

“Oh yeah...haven’t you seen the way my brother is looking at you Bella. He is totally crushing on you...I just want to give him his chance.” She laughed at the look on my face and walked away from me quickly.

“Mary Alice Cull...”

“You ready?” Edward popped back into the room.

“Sure.” I headed toward the door, but turned back to give Alice the evil eye. I heard her giggle.

What the hell was I getting myself into?

#####

Chapter: 10

Chapter 10 – The Car

When we reached the car Edward opened the door for me. “Thank you” I said quietly as I climbed in and sat down. *This was going to be an uncomfortable trip. Thankfully LaPush is not that far away; it will be a quick uncomfortable trip. I’m going to kill Alice.*

“Ready?” Edward had slid behind the wheel of his father’s car.

“Yep” I answered quickly and looked straight ahead. I was simply going to keep looking out the window during the trip and knowing that he drove as fast as Alice I was feeling a little more at ease.

Pulling out of the driveway we were silent as I figured it would be. I felt Edward move but refused to look. When I heard music I realized that he had turned the radio on. My phone beeped and I pulled it out of my pocket. Alice.

Don't do anything I wouldn't do. :) Feel free to take your time.

I was going to kill her.

Just wait till I see you...paybacks are a bitch. Or perhaps I'll just slip up and tell him about Jasper!

It was only a minute later when I got her reply.

You would never do that to me. You love me too much. :)

"Ugh" I sighed.

"Everything okay?" I snapped my head to see Edward watching me with a crooked grin. *Damn it! There goes the do not look at him plan!*

"Yeah, it's fine." I smiled, put my phone away, and turned my head back to the window.

"So Bella, what got you into computers?" *Where we really talking about computers again?*

"Uh..I don't know. I guess I just was good with them and I liked it, so it just became my thing." I shrugged still looking straight ahead. I then realized that he was driving slower than he typically did. *Great!*

"Hmm." He paused for what seemed like forever until he spoke again. "So what is your favorite color?"

I couldn't help but turn my head to look at him. *Was he serious?* I know that my face was covered in confusion.

"I can ask you that can't I? I mean do my questions bother you?" He was smirking.

"No, I just...Green." I sighed out.

"Favorite food?"

"I..uh..I guess Chinese."

"You guess?"

"Yeah, I don't particularly have a favorite food, but I guess I tend to get Chinese a lot. At least that's what Alice tells me." I shrugged. I was doing that a lot. *Why did I feel so self conscious around him?*

"Well you seemed to be pretty excited about pancakes this morning?" He chuckled. *Oh god, please don't revisit what he said this morning. I am begging the lord above that he doesn't bring*

up what he said.

“What can I say, your mom makes that best pancakes; ever.” I smiled.

“That is very true.” I looked back out the window. *Thank you god; we were almost there.*

“Bella?” I turned to him again. *Shit! Keep your face forward Bella.* “When is your birthday?”
Huh? Why would he...?

“Um, September, why?” He shrugged. I sucked in a breath and found my inner confidence. “So what’s with the interrogation Edward?”

“I asked if it was bothering you. Did you lie to me?” He smiled at me. *Damn him and that crooked smile! Suck it up Bella this is Alice’s brother, the same guy you grew up around; the same guy that has never looked at you twice and sees you as his sister. Quit acting so weird about this.*

“No I didn’t lie. It’s not bothering me.” *lie* “I just don’t get what all the questions are about? It’s not like we are close or hang out or anything.” I furrowed my brow and turned to see we had arrived to the beach. *YES!*

As soon as he stopped I got out of the car. Heading to my truck I felt a hand wrap around my wrist. I turned and Edward’s face was much closer that I expected; I hadn’t even heard him get out of the car. I took a step back to put space between us.

“I was going to get the door for you, you know?” He took a step to bring himself back to being only about three inches from my body.

“That’s okay, I got it, but thanks.” I started to take another step back, but Edward still held my wrist and stepped with me when I moved. “Um, Edward, can you let go of my wrist?” I looked down to my wrist and saw his thumb start to rub over my skin. “Edward...” I looked back up to ask him again to let go, but his face was intense and I saw indecision on his face.

“Bella” he finally spoke. “We could change that, you know?” I bit my lip and looked confused. “Being close, you know like you and Alice are.”

“Yeah, okay. Umm...I need to get back.” I slid my arm free and climbed into my car. Once I pulled out of Edward’s sight I exhaled a breath that I hadn’t realized I had been holding. *What the fuck was that?*

EPOV

I didn’t know what the fuck I was thinking when I said I would drive her to get her car, but it was clear on her face that she wasn’t into the idea. I tried to make conversation, just to ease the tension, but all the questions that I wanted answers to were ones for me to get to know her. She was clearly uncomfortable and I was making it worse.

When she got out of the car the urge to go after her was ridiculous. It was like there was a cord binding me to her. I had quickly grabbed her wrist and brought myself close to her. I could smell her; she smelled like flowers and strawberries. The feel of her skin was like buttery silk; it's the only way to describe it.

"I was going to get the door for you, you know?" I had felt her move back, but that damn cord feeling just pulled me with her.

"That's okay, I got it, but thanks." She started to take another step back. "Um, Edward, can you let go of my wrist?" I couldn't stop touching her skin. I heard what she was saying but the smell and feel of her so close was overwhelming. "Edward..." She looked back up to my face and stopped what she was saying. She studied my face. I wanted to bring her perfect lips to mine. I wanted to know if she tasted as good as she felt and smelled. Fighting an internal battle to actually let her go I said the first thing that I thought about.

"Bella" I looked into her eyes. "We could change that, you know?" She looked confused and she bit her lip. *Fuck that lip biting thing is hot.* I continued. "Being close, you know like you and Alice are." I was serious. I wanted to get to know her; I had to. There was something that pulled me to her and didn't allow me to walk away.

"Yeah, okay. Umm...I need to get back." *Fuck!* I had definitely come on too strong as I felt her pull her wrist out of my hand and hurry into her truck. I walked back to the car watching her drive away. I leaned back against the car and sighed; running my hand through my hair.

"What the hell is the matter with me!" I shouted at myself aloud and rubbed my hands over my face. I knew what was wrong with me. Bella was what was wrong with me.

BPOV

I parked my car at my house and went inside. My mind was still turning over everything that had happened. *He said to get close like I am with Alice. I am close to Alice like a sister, so he wants to be close to me like a sister. But then what was with the looks, the remarks this morning, and the whole wrist thing. Jesus Fucking Christ!* Given all my confusion with all things that were Edward, I was suddenly relieved when I remembered the he was leaving today. I only had to hang at my house until after lunch. That would be easy; Al and Rose could easily hang at our house instead of Al's.

I entered my room to see Rose lying on her bed with her laptop and Emmett was lying next to her. She turned when I walked into the room and smiled. "So, did you get your truck?" She giggled lightly.

"Hey Bells" Emmett raised his hand to wave and then placed it back onto Rose's back.

"Yes" I hissed. "I got my truck. Where is Al?"

“Oh she was making a ‘call’ so I came over here.” She winked at me.

I shook my head. “Well I hope she had a good phone call! The evil little trouble maker.” I plopped down on my bed.

“Well I’m sure that Jasper appreciated getting to talk to her if that makes you feel any better.” I shot my head over to look at Emmett. Rose was staring at him too. “What? You think that I didn’t figure that shit out? Please! Dude looks at her like he is going to eat her.” He laughed. “The same way that Edward looks like he is going to devour...” He stopped.

“Hey. I should’ve known this is where you would be.” Edward spoke as he walked in off the balcony. *Shit, shit, shit! Ugh! My fortress of solitude has been compromised. There goes my plan. Shit.*

Emmett rolled over and wrapped himself around Rose. “Um let me see...sit over at your house alone or lie around with this hot fucking lady right here? I think that the decision would have been easy for you too dude.” He smiled large as he squeezed Rose. It was kind of sweet and I saw Rose shove him a little as she smiled.

“Did you at least pack up all your stuff?” Emmett nodded that he had. Edward wasn’t looking at me at all. I was thankful, but at the same time it kind of bothered me.

I turned my head back to the ceiling and threw my arm over my face. *I’ll just lie here till they, or at least he, leaves.* Then I felt my bed dip. My heart felt like it was going to burst out of my chest, but when I opened my eyes it was Alice. She lay down next to me, on her back, putting her head on my thigh.

“So Edward, when exactly are you guys going to finally get the fuck out?” She laughed. “Or have you decided to stay a little longer?” I could hear the innuendo in her voice. I jerked my thigh so that her head was jolted and she giggled.

“Why Alice? Do you have plans hidden from me?” He eyed her suspiciously.

“Of course not Eddie.” She laughed. His face contorted.

“You know I hate that Alice.” He scowled at her.

“Sorry Eddie. I’ll try not to let it happen again.” This time we all laughed with her.

Edward quickly jumped onto my bed and started to tickle Alice. I shifted quickly to move away from the chaos. We were all still laughing and I was pinned against my wall waiting for them to calm down. Then Edward grabbed Alice into a hug, kissed her head, and just lay there with her. It was cute. I moved to get up, but felt a hand around my calf. I knew by the electric pulse that it was Edward. He caressed my leg before I shook it off and got up from the bed. I sat at my computers to distract myself.

“Oh my god. You know what we need to do?” Alice sat up quickly.

“If you say go shopping, so help me god Alice I will throw this laptop at you.” I threatened from behind my desk. Rose laughed.

“No...well, we will need to do that eventually though.” I sighed at her response. “We need to plan the Halloween party.”

“Al, you always plan a Halloween party and you have some time before that” Rose rebutted her idea.

Alice shook her head. “Just listen. This year will be different; we are going to do costumes!” She was bouncing. “Don’t worry I will plan out ours! Maybe ‘Alice in Wonderland’; I’ll be Alice of course, and Rose you can be the ‘Queen of Hearts’ and Bella...” She stopped when she saw the look on my face. “Oh suck it up Bella, you will definitely be the ‘Mad Hatter’.” She giggled. I rolled my eyes.

Rose changed the subject, thankfully. “Why don’t we worry about our camping trip for the time being?”

“You guys are going camping?” Edward was stifling laughter and Em was chuckling.

Alice turned to Edward. “What’s that supposed to mean?”

“Well, there are no closets” he looked at Alice. “No computers” he looked at me. “And there isn’t really anywhere to do your hair or make up” he looked at Rose. Then he and Em started laughing again.

“Zip it Eddie!” Alice smiled largely. “It’s not going to be just us; there is a group of us going.”

Edward sat up quickly. “A group?”

“Yeah. Angela, Ben, the three of us of course, Mike, Eric, Ty...” She stopped and looked at me. I didn’t move or flinch. I heard her, but screw it. I’m not getting upset over it.

“So it’s a coed thing?” Edward asked her.

“Calm down Edward.” Em said as he sat up. “I think it’s about time for us to take off don’t you?” He said as he looked at a watch that didn’t exist on his wrist. I laughed and Edward shot a look at me.

“Yeah I guess.” He was hesitant but he got up and headed back over to his house. I took a deep breath when he left.

Once they were gone Alice was on me with a thousand questions. “So what happened in the car? Did you talk? What did he say? Oohh did you kiss him?”

“Alice!” I shouted at her. “Stop it, nothing happened.” *He just wouldn’t let me leave and felt up my leg before he left just now. Ugh!* “We went and got the truck and then drove back separately.”

“Yeah right, then why do you look like you are hiding something?” Rose eyed me as she spoke. *Damn her!*

“Okay, he asked me questions about computers and some other stuff, but it wasn’t a big deal.” I shrugged and continued to type away on my laptop.

Before I saw it coming, Rose’s hand snapped my laptop shut. “Spill it Bella.” She smirked at me with Alice standing next to her. I sighed in defeat.

I told them everything thing that happened, every single detail. I hated bringing it all back up. The only thing that I left out was the leg thing before I got off the bed.

“Bella, I think that my brother is completely into you.” Alice said with a slightly dazed look on her face.

“I have to agree. I mean he wouldn’t let you leave?” I shook my head. “Hmm.”

I didn’t like where their minds may be going. “Look it’s not a big deal. He’s leaving today and I’m sure that by the next time he is around it will be long forgotten.” I opened my laptop back up and returned to what I was working on.

Realizing that it was eerily quiet in this room, I looked over my laptop to see Alice and Rose talking in hushed tones on her bed. I didn’t like the look of that.

#####

Chapter: 11

Chapter 11 – Pitching a Tent

For the past two weeks Alice had done nothing but talk about Halloween. Rose and I were about to stuff a pumpkin in her mouth to shut her up. Thankfully the camping trip was tomorrow and would last for the entire weekend, so Alice’s mind had switched gears to camping.

Currently Alice had us shopping for ‘camping gear’. Now Alice’s ‘camping gear’ consisted of cute outfits that could be worn while camping. Rose and she both had about four bags full of new clothes to go camping. I didn’t quite understand. I mean wouldn’t you be out in the woods getting dirty, so why would you wear new clothes? Alice forced a couple of new pairs of shorts

and pants into my arms and I had grabbed a couple hooded sweatshirts.

After finishing shopping at the mall, I made them stop at the local Wal-Mart so we could pick up things that would actually be needed for camping. We grabbed two tents, sleeping bags, bug repellent, and other various camping necessities.

The camping trip arrived quickly. Rose and I were loading up my truck with all of our things; waiting on Alice to bring her things. After Alice's stuff was loaded we climbed into the truck together and headed to LaPush beach to meet with the entire group.

When we arrived a large group had already formed: Lauren and Tyler were attached at the hip *Gag!*; Eric and Mike were there tossing a football back and forth; Leah and Sam were leaning against their car with Jacob standing in front of them; Jessica and Irina; and then there was Quil and Embry along with Emily and Clare. Once everyone was packed into their cars we all headed toward the campground that was about twenty minutes further into the reservation in LaPush.

Arriving at the campsite you could see where other's had been there not too long ago. There was still wood piled up near the large fire pit and large stones that circled around for seating.

Everyone started grabbing their things and claiming their camping spots. Alice, Rose, and I began building the two tents that we had brought with us.

"You need some help?" I turned my head to see Jake reaching over my head to help with the tent pole.

"Thanks Jake, but you don't have..."

"It's not a problem." He smiled a large bright white smile that seemed to make his skin look even darker. "I already helped Sam get his tent up and you guys look like you need some assistance."

"Umm..Thanks." I turned back around and we started getting the first tent up, and then moved on to the second one.

"These are nice. You guys did a good job picking them out." Jake stood observing the two tents that were now fully erected and secure.

"Thanks!" Alice said bubbly. "Rose and Bells are the two who picked them out though."

After all the tents were put up everyone started situating bags of clothes and sleeping bags into their tents; then started setting up folding chairs, a radio, and coolers. Mike had brought a grill that would fit over the fire and brought a small gas stove that he set up on a picnic table. The guys grabbed more picnic tables and situated them around the campsite better.

Once everything was set up, music was playing, and a small fire was started; everyone started doing random things. Leah and Sam headed over to the woods to get more wood. Mike, Jessica,

and Eric headed down toward the water with fishing poles. Tyler and Lauren seemed to be 'busy' in their tent. Alice, Rose, and I decided to go for a hike.

"Do you mind if we tag along?" Jake caught up to us with Quil and Embry.

"Sure, no problem." Alice smiled to them.

We all walked for awhile; Jake catching me by my arm a few times when I slipped. When there was very little sunlight left in the sky we decided to head back to camp. It ended up being good luck to have Embry with us; he knew his way around the woods really well and we got back to camp before it got too dark to see.

You could see the campfire from the edge of the woods; it was lighting the site up brilliantly. We all headed over and saw that there were hamburgers and hotdogs already done. Grabbing a plate of food each, we sat around the fire eating, talking, and laughing with everyone.

Waking the next morning was a lot harder than I thought it would be. Luckily I could smell coffee and I was so thankful to whoever it was that had thought to bring it and to get up and make it. I climbed out of my tent; completely sure that my hair was a tangled frizzy mess. I slid my sweatshirt on over my head and walked toward the smell of coffee.

Jessica, Mike, Jake, and Eric were all sitting at a picnic table looking as rough as I probably did.

"Morning guys" I yawned out and stumbled to the coffee.

"Morning" the guys said in unison.

"Please tell me why I agreed to go camping of all godforsaken things?" Jessica said out loud to anyone that would listen, while she shook her head in her hands.

"Oh come on. The fresh air is good for the soul." Eric took a deep breath in and exhaled into her face.

"Ew Eric! Coffee and morning breathe, yeah, not a good combination." She shrieked.

I couldn't hold back the laughter as I sat down between Jacob and Eric. Jessica glared at me and I just shrugged as I kept laughing.

Alice and Rose appeared about fifteen minutes later and they resembled everyone else's appearance. As more people began to wake up I got up and helped Mike to start breakfast; Jacob and Rose joined in with helping as well.

After breakfast we saw that some other campers had started a basketball game on the camp's court, so we decided to get dressed and walk over. I liked to watch, but wasn't coordinated enough to play. When the game had finished Rose pulled me out to shoot some baskets.

I reluctantly got up and started shooting around with her and Alice. Then we started goofing around trying to steal the ball from each other. I tripped over Alice's tiny little foot, but before I could kiss the pavement I was grabbed and pulled upright. Flipping my hair out of my face, I saw Jacob smirking down at me.

"Thanks" I blushed. "I'm always tripping over nothing."

He laughed. "No problem." I went to walk away but he still had a grip on my arm. I turned back to him with my eyebrows raised in curiosity. "Wanna walk down to the water with me?"

"Uh..." I hesitated and then his face dropped. It was looking at a little five year old boy have his toy swiped away from him. "Sure Jake." His face quickly pulled up into a smile.

He let go of my arm and we walked down toward the water where people were fishing. "So Bella, what do you plan to do after high school? I mean this is your last year."

"Well, I am waiting to hear back from a few places about scholarships and admittance. You know all that fun stuff." I smiled toward him and then we sat on a large log at the edge of the water.

Jacob and I ended up talking for about an hour; I hadn't realized it until Rose showed up to get me for the volleyball game. I groaned and reluctantly got up to follow her; Jake followed us.

Back at camp the next was already up and people were splitting into teams. Alice and I ended up on a team; though Rose ended on the opposing. We trash talked to each other before we started playing; even though I knew that I sucked at sports.

The ball was flying back and forth; our team would score then the other team. I avoided the ball at all costs letting someone else nearby cover my position; however, the last hit sent the ball directly toward my head. I was about to duck when Alice jumped and landed into my side; sending us both tumbling to the ground and laughing hysterically. Jacob appeared above us laughing reaching down to help Alice up and then me.

"Sorry." He said leaning over to me. I gave him a curious look. "I couldn't get there in time to catch you." He smiled and went back to his position.

The rest of the week went by similarly and by our last day at camp I couldn't have been happier about getting out of the damn tent and sleeping in my own bed. I smiled like charcoaled ass and seriously wasn't about to take another cold shower. I had had enough of those for the rest of my life. Everyone packed up early in the morning and hung out for a few hours until we all started to disperse one group at a time.

Arriving home I didn't even bother unpacking my stuff; I ran straight to the shower.

"Bitch!" Rose jokingly yelled after me as I slammed the bathroom door closed.

“Ha HA!” I yelled in victory.

After showering away the week and feeling more like myself I went down to the truck to get my stuff. I dumped my things out into the washing machine and started to wash the grime and fire smell out.

I could hear the shower running when I got back to my bedroom. I sat down to my computers and fired them all up. The sound of all of them buzzing around me was like an instant high. “I missed you all. My babies.” I rubbed fingers gently across the keyboard.

“You are sick! S-I-C-K!” Alice said as she entered my room from the balcony. I laughed hilariously at getting busted talking to my damn computers.

“Yeah well....so what?” I stuck my tongue out and she laughed at me.

Alice sprawled out on my bed and Rose came out of the bathroom in some comfy lounge clothes and sprawled across her bed. It only took a few minutes till I heard their even breathing and knew that they had fallen asleep. I chuckled silently at the both of them and went back to my computer.

I pulled up my email account and started checking through my emails; deleting spam and reading over some others. It was when I was clicking on a few that I was going to delete that I saw a new address – , but it wasn’t some random email; I knew who it belonged to immediately. Edward. I hesitated, biting my lip for a few minutes and looked up to see if Al and Rose were still sleeping. I opened the email that had been sent at two in the morning.

Hey,

How did camping go?

Edward.

It was strange. It was a very simple email, but it was just strange. It took me about ten minutes to figure out what to reply back or whether I should reply at all. I sucked it up and hit the reply button.

Hi.

It was fun, glad it’s over.

Bella.

I hit send and wanted to instantly bring it back. I am such an idiot. Why didn’t I just ignore it? “Arghh” I groaned out loud.

“What’s your problem?” My head shot up and I saw Alice laying on her side with her head

propped up on her hand looking at me with a raised brow.

“Nothing.” I mumbled. *Besides that I just replied to an email from your older brother. Ugh!* “I just messed up something and I don’t know how to correct it.” I shook my head and closed out all my email stuff in case she decided to come over.

“You better not have messed up my program.” She scolded playfully. She stretched. “I’m hungry! Let’s go down to the diner and get some food.”

“You get to wake up the grouch then.” I pointed to Rose. Alice started throwing pillows over at Rose.

“What the fuck!” Rose’s head shot up and saw Rose holding her sides laughing. “You will pay Alice!” Quicker than Alice could comprehend, Rose was off her bed and tackling her. Alice broke out into loud laughter as Rose tickled her relentlessly.

I turned off all of my computer stuff and slipped on my shoes. “Last one to the car has to pay for lunch!” Then I bolted down the stairs with Rose and Alice close behind; all of us laughing so loud that Sue rushed out of the kitchen to see what the commotion was about.

“Girls! Settle down!” Sue yelled as we made our way to through the door.

“Sorry Sue!” I yelled and touched the truck first.

#####

Chapter: 12

A/N: Okay so I wasn’t completely feeling it with the last chapter; however I am totally feeling this chapter. You can find pictures of the Alice, Bella, and Rose’s costumes on my profile in the links.

Hope that this makes up for the last chapter; and big thank you to everyone that has been reviewing and those that have been with me since 6 degrees. Oh...also wanted to let you know, if you didn’t already that ‘Opener vs. Headliner’ has it’s official first chapter up. Okay well it’s more like the story set-up chapter. But I will begin updating soon. I am working out the first two chapters for it now.

I had to update All Grown up a few times since I have neglected it for so long.

Chapter 12 – Boohoo, BOO!

I woke early wrapped up with Rose and Alice; having shared a large oversized blanket in the tree house. I sat up and looked around seeing all the remnants of our ‘Good Luck at College’ party last night. Bags of chips, bowls of melted ice cream, bottles of water and soda, cookie bags, and a large pizza box were scattered around us. The thought of all the food we ate last night made my stomach turn.

I lay back down next to Rose and wrapped my arms around her. *I was going to miss her greatly.* Rose started to shift and move; I knew she was waking. She rolled over and smiled at me.

“I’m gonna really miss you” tears forming in my eyes.

“Me too B.” She hugged me tightly. “It will only be a year before you guys join me in Seattle and I will be visiting as much as possible.” She smiled and kissed my cheek.

“How come no one woke me up for the lesbian make-out session?” Alice groaned out as she stretched. “I’m offended! Am I not hot enough for you two?” We laughed and Alice wiggled herself into our hug; all of us pressing our head forward together.

A few hours later, we had said our goodbyes and watched Rose’s plane take off. Teary eyed and feeling slightly numb from our trio being separated, Alice and I headed to get some lunch and then headed home.

Before Alice and I could miss Rose too much senior year of high school was upon us. Alice had drug me out to shop for school clothes, not that I thought I needed any more clothes; Alice disagreed. The shopping was still weird without Rose.

I finished Alice’s program for her computer and had her all set up with her new state of the art designer program, specifically designed for her; it only took me a damn year to get it done. She was thrilled and used it to create some portfolios that she wanted to put together.

School had begun in the normal fashion; settling into the routine of the school day, figuring out what each teacher expected from you, and so on. Luckily I had been in AP classes for most of high school that I really only had four major classes to worry about. I mean I had an advanced computer course, but I and the teacher knew that I could probably assist with teaching the class; which is what he ended up doing. He used me to assist other students, to tutor other students, and he also had set me up with a part time job with a local company that needed some IT assistance.

Alice was in full Halloween party planning mode. She had finished the invitations and had gone over everything with her parents. Distribution of the invitations was going to be done by a guy in a grim reaper costume passing them out. I tried to tell her that it was slightly creepy, but she just called it festive.

The week before the party Alice had received the costumes that she had decided for us to wear; us meaning Rose, her, and me. She had stuck with the Alice in Wonderland theme for us; however, I wasn’t prepared for the skimpiness of the outfits. When I thought Alice in Wonderland I totally went to the Disney cartoon; not Alice. She found the sexiest versions that

she knew our parents would let us get away with and bought those. All costume's fluffy skirt barely passed the middle of our thighs. Alice's was light blue with a white apron, sleeves with ruffles around the hem of the costume. Rose's was black and red with a white apron-like front that had red hearts on it, puffy sleeves, and a crown. My costume, the mad hatter, was shiny green and gold, with a small bolero like cape that was gold, green hat (like the mad hatter), and black corset looking middle. Al made sure that she and I had knee socks and black shoes; Rose had no knee socks and red heels to match. I tried to fight her, but no such luck and Rose was no help who fell in love with the costumes.

I was sitting in the computer lab during my free period when I got a text from Alice asking me to skip my last period and meet her at the truck. When the bell rang I bolted to the parking lot while the campus was filled with students shuffling around to their next classes.

I found Alice leaning against my truck. "Okay, what's up?"

"I'm what's up baby!" Rose jumped from behind my truck.

I squealed and ran to hug her tightly. Alice bounced up and down. "Okay let's get the hell out of here before someone spots us." Alice said quickly before shutting the passenger door of my truck. Rose climbed into her car, I got into the truck, and we all headed back to my house.

Once we were all in my room Alice called a meeting about the party tomorrow. As usual Alice had a plan and was ready to hand out assignments on decorations, food, costumes, and everything you could imagine.

"Okay, I have all the decorations waiting in boxes in the dining room as my house. So, I think we should start decorating tonight." She smiled looking between Rose and I who were lounging on my bed while Alice sat across from us on Rose's bed. "Mom is going to start making some of the food for the party so that it is ready. You know, stuff that has to be done beforehand."

"Shouldn't we help her?" I asked.

"Sure, as long as we have the decorating done first." Alice's voice was firm. I saluted her and she stuck her tongue out at me. "Now if you are done being a smartass" Alice glanced at me.

"We need to think about what party game ideas we are going to go with."

"Games? What are we Alice, five?" Rose groaned.

"I wanna play pin the arm on the zombie!! Can we? Can we?" I stifled my laugh as I raised my arm in the air.

Alice scowled at me. "I was thinking more like a costume contest/awards, maybe apple bobbing, and....."

"Seriously Alice, this time I am going to have to just say NO." Rose gave her a stern look. "Are we all going to go trick-r-treating too?" Rose looked at her exacerbad.

“Okay fine. We’ll just go with music.” She crossed her arms and huffed. “But I will get Halloween music in there somehow too.” Rose groaned and I laughed.

We headed over to Alice’s about an hour later and started decorating. Alice had gotten so many decorations on top of the ones that Esme already had; they loved Halloween. We hung fake dungeon scenes on every wall in the dining room and living room. There were spider webs stretched across all windows, over every archway, and even around furniture. Alice made sure to put in black lights and strobe lights; she even got a mist machine. A life size coffin was in one corner that electronically opened if you walked passed it and electronic spiders that would drop down from the ceiling and crawl back up their wires. It really looked cool and hell they could probably open up their own haunted house with all this stuff.

I was the first to bail on decorating and went to help Esme. She was making cookies that were Halloween shapes; bat, pumpkin, ghosts, etc.

“So what has my dear daughter planned for your costumes?” Esme asked as I was putting icing on some of the cookies.

“I’m surprised you couldn’t guess or that she didn’t already show you” I smirked. She looked up to me smiling. “Alice in Wonderland.” I sighed. “Of course Alice is Alice” Esme chuckled. “Rose is the Queen of Hearts and I am the Mad Hatter.”

“Well those sound interesting.” She smiled. “Leave it to Alice.” She shook her head.

“So what about you and Carlisle? You guys are coming right, I mean at least for a little bit?”

“Alice of course decided that we should have matching costumes; though she is being kind enough to let us pick for ourselves.” She laughed. “We haven’t decided just yet. I need to go out tonight and pick something up.”

“You better hurry or suffer the wrath of Alice Cullen” I made a shock face.

“What about me?” I snapped my head over as Alice and Rose entered the kitchen

“Oh, Nothing.” I said innocently.

“Uh-huh...” She narrowed her eyes at me suspiciously.

After we were done decorating and helping Esme we headed up to Al’s room. Alice was playing with her fashion program and I was helping her through some of the features and options that she had with the program. Rose was in the shower when we heard loud voices downstairs.

Alice jumped up and headed to her door; I followed her. We both stood in her doorway listening.

“BOO!” Alice and I jumped and screamed.

“Damn it Rose, you scared me to death.” Alice yelled as I laughed.

“What the hell are you two doing?” She asked looking at us like we had lost our minds.

“There were loud voices downstairs and you interrupted my eavesdropping, damn it!” Alice scolded. Rose laughed. “Now I’ll just have to go down and find...”

“Alice!” Esme called.

“Coming...” Alice yelled as she headed downstairs.

Rose and I were lying across Al’s bed talking and joking around when Alice burst in closing the door behind her. We turned around quickly to look at her; she had her back pressed against the door with a huge smile.

“What it is?” I asked her starting to smile myself; just because her smile was so infectious.

“Jasper” she whispered.

“Jasper?” I furrowed my brows.

“Jasper is here?” Rose asked.

Alice nodded her head fervently. “Edward is home for the weekend and Jasper is with him.” She walked over and threw herself down between Rose and me.

“Uh oh” I shook my head. “Am I gonna have to fake another night with Jasper?” I giggled and Alice smacked me.

“NO. Of course not, we are just friends because he is with someone.” I raised an eyebrow at her. “Okay, okay, so maybe I would like more, but I would never do that. So I just get to dream about it.” She was still smiling.

We didn’t see the guys until it was time for dinner. Esme and Carlisle had gone out to dinner with my parents so Alice, Rose and I were rummaging through the kitchen for food. I was sitting on the counter top, Rose was leaning on the cabinets across from me, and Alice’s ass was sticking out of the refrigerator.

“All who say we get pizza say ‘I’” I raised my arm.

“I” Rose said giggling and raising her arm.

“I” said a boisterous voice that came from behind me. I turned and Emmett was standing with his hand up.

Alice stood up and rolled her eyes. "Fine." She grabbed the phone and started ordering.

I watched Emmett eye Rose from across the room while she pretended to ignore him. *Damn she was good. I have to remember to give her props later.*

Then he came in with Jasper. Edward. Internally I felt the panic begin to take over. As I was going to hop off the counter he walked between Rose and me and leaned back between my legs. I blushed ferociously and leaned back from him. It's not that I didn't want to be near him, I just felt weird.

"So, Rose could you please pay attention to my friend over there before he leaves a pool of slobber on my mom's kitchen floor?" Rose smirked and looked over at Em.

"Screw you dude!" Emmett spit out. "Why don't you worry about yourself and get the balls to turn around and tell B..." Edward cut him off by walking over to him and grabbing his head in a headlock.

"Don't be that way Emmett, she's over here now." Rose was standing next to Em. Once he pushed Edward off of him he wrapped an arm around Rose.

"It's about time you got your fine ass over here." Em said squeezing her. Rose giggled.

I hopped off the counter the second Edward moved; standing next to Alice while she finished placing the order.

"Jesus Christ! Could you guys have been any louder?" She slammed the phone down. "I could barely hear what the retarded guy on the other end of the phone was saying. Shit!" I covered my mouth to hide my hysterics at Alice's rant. Edward, Emmett, Jasper, and Rose all cracked up. Alice leered at all of them.

After the pizza Alice, Rose and I decided to head up to Al's room to get ready for bed and get some sleep before tomorrow's party. Em did everything in his power to delay Rose from leaving.

Before Alice got all the way upstairs she yelled back down. "You guys had better have costumes for tomorrow if you plan on being here for the party!"

Party day had arrived and Alice was running around crazily trying to get everything in perfect place before the guests started arriving. Rose and I were moving things around three or four times before she would finally decide on where she wanted it. Edward, Emmett, and Jasper were moving furniture around. When it was finally two hours till the party Alice calmed down some, but then declared that it was time to get dressed for the party. I sighed and Rose and she drug me up the steps.

After we were all showered it was time to start hair. Alice and Rose put my hair in curlers and then they took turns with each other's hair. Alice had her usually spiky hair smoothed out and flipped under with a large light blue headband around her head. Rose had her hair rolled up into

rolls, curls, and swirls; having Alice place the crown into her hair securely. Then came the make up.

Rose worked on Alice's make-up, and then Alice did Roses. Alice worked on my make-up while Rose was busing taking out the curlers and working my hair so that it hung out loosely from my hat. Once they were finished we moved on to costumes.

Almost two hours later we were all putting on our shoes and getting ready to head downstairs. Esme appeared, not in costume, in Alice's room with a camera.

"You guys look so cute." She exclaimed as she took a few shots. "Wait till you see your brother and the guys."

"Oh god, mom, what did he do?" Alice got a worried look.

"No, no honey. It's good. They just are funny, that's all." She waved off Alice's worries. "Okay I have to go get dressed and make sure your dad is getting ready. See you downstairs." Esme shut the door behind her and we all did a quick one over then headed out the door.

As we walked down the steps we saw that a Mike, Jess, and Eric had arrived; they were talking with Edward, Em, and Jasper. Mike was dressed as a cop, Jess as a cat, and Eric was Dracula; however, the amusement was that Edward, Em, and Jasper were The Three Musketeers and they were totally playing it out with having sword fights.

"Oh god, could you grow up?" Alice teased Edward who just realized we had come down. He shook his head and smiled at Alice who kept teasing him.

I saw Em stare down Rose; who made sure that she sashayed herself right past him as she headed toward the DJ that Alice had gotten. He followed closely behind. Then I caught Jasper's lustful eyes checking out Alice in all her wonderland that he was obviously willing to go down her rabbit whole.

"Bella" I turned to see my parents walking in from the kitchen. I cracked up immediately.

"Geez dad, how did Sue talk you into this?" I laughed out.

He groaned. "She's persuasive, let's just say that."

"Ew...too much information, say no more!" He shrugged as I cringed. Charlie and Sue were Herman and Lily Munster, it was hilarious to see Charlie so uncomfortable.

"You look adorable." Sue said as she stepped back to get a whole view of the outfit that I felt completely self conscious in. Then she saw Rose and Alice too. "Oh my, you guys need to stay close all night, because as a group you are adorable; though the skirts could have been a little longer you know?"

“Blame Alice.” I quickly spit out. “I feel completely uncomfortable as it is in this outfit.” I shrugged.

“You have no reason to feel uncomfortable; you are a beautiful girl Bella. I wish you would realize that.” Sue said as she hugged me.

“I agree” Esme appeared with Carlisle. I smiled huge and giggled more. They were dressed as Gomez and Morticia Adams.

“OH MY LORD! Alice come HERE!!!!” I shouted over my shoulder.

Alice bounded up to me and took in her parents and then mine before she started laughing. “This is too perfect! You guys look great!” She bounced like a little kid in a candy store.

More people started to show up: Leah and Sam were Pocahontas and Indian Chief; Seth was in an orange jumpsuit like an escaped prisoner; Tyler and Lauren were a gangster and a flapper; Jacob, Quil, and Embry came as the three stooges; Emily and Clare were a princess and a rabbit. Others started to show up as well. It was going to be a packed house.

The food was going quickly, along with the drinks. The music was blaring and people were really dancing. Rose, Alice, and I were out dancing together and having a great time. Emmett finally pulled Rose to dance with him and Alice pulled me off to the kitchen.

“I need a huge favor.” I rolled my eyes.

“What do you want Al?”

“Jasper keeps whispering hints for us to go hang out.” I gave her a stern look. “No, seriously, just to hang out and talk; you know we do enjoy each other’s company and friendship. It doesn’t have to be physical.” Alice said a little upset.

I hugged her. “I know Al, I just don’t want him to hurt you.” I pulled her back still holding her shoulder. “You be careful with your heart your hear me?” She smiled. “So what is this favor? Am I supposed to take him out somewhere with me and you will be there waiting?” I figured that I had the idea perfect.

“Umm...no.” She looked down to the floor. “I um...Ineedyoutodistractedward.” She rushed through like I would catch what she was asking me to do.

“You want me to do what? Alice I don’t think that’s a good idea...” she cut me off.

“Please, please, please Bella, I promise to make it up to you.” She gave me the puppy dog eyes.
Damn her!

“You OWE ME!” I scowled. “BIG TIME!”

“I know, I know.” She bounced.

“Here’s the deal. Where are you and Jasper going to ‘talk’?”

“The pool house.” She answered eagerly.

“Okay, well, I’ll keep an eye on Edward. If and only IF he seems to be headed that way will I intervene and keep him distracted. You got it? So keep your guard up and your ears working.” I pointed a finger at her.

“No problem and thank you so much Bella.” She hugged me again.

“Yeah, yeah, yeah...no go find lover boy, you home wrecker!” She scowled as I giggled and headed back to locate Edward.

#####

Chapter: 13

Chapter 13 – The Party EPOV

EPOV

“Wake-up bastards we are here!” I slapped Emmett on the arm as I shouted at him and Jasper; both of them had fallen asleep while I drove back to Forks.

“Oww! Shit dude.” Emmett grumbled.

“Jasper wake-up before I throw shit at you.” I threatened. He didn’t budge so I threw my half full soda bottle at him.

“Ouch! Fuck Edward!” He yelled and jerked upright.

“Well wake the hell up when I say to. It’s bad enough that I had to drive the last hour and a half listening to you both snore.”

“I don’t snore.” Emmett snapped.

“The hell if you don’t!” I laughed.

Mom was the first one to see us as we headed into the house. “Oh my goodness, Edward!” She ran into my arms and we hugged. I lifted her up and swung her in a circle, placing a kiss on the

top of her head. “I didn’t think that you were going to make it home this weekend?” She questioned.

“I know, but we got some things changed around so here we are.” I smiled at her as she hugged and welcomed Jasper and Emmett.

“Wait till your sister finds out you were able to make it; oh, and if you don’t have costumes for the party I suggest that you get one immediately or she will kill you.” My mom smirked.

“ALICE...” Mom yelled.

“Coming...” Al yelled from upstairs.

Alice came running down the steps and stopped when she saw me.

“Is that any way to welcome me home baby sister?” I smirked at her. *Let the teasing begin.*

“Oh Eddie, it’s so wonderful that you are home.” She walked over with a fake sweetness to her face. Then she smirked and we hugged tightly.

“I missed you.” I whispered to her.

“I missed you too” Said back. *I love my little sister so much.* “You better have a costume, or I will pick one out for you.” She smiled large. *Did I just say that I loved the evil little troll?*

“We’ll get our own, thanks. I don’t trust you at all; you’ll have us dressed as girls or something.” I laughed and she smirked at me and winked as she headed back upstairs.

Later in early evening I heard voices in the kitchen; knowing it was Alice and probably Bella. Em, Jazz and I got up from the couch and headed toward the kitchen. When we entered I saw Rose standing across from Bella, who was seated on top of the counter, and Alice digging through the fridge.

“All who say we get pizza say ‘I’” Bella said as she raised her arm goofily like a little kid.

“I” Rose said giggling and raising her arm.

“I” Emmett said mimicking Bella and Rose who turned to see him in the kitchen.

Alice stood up and rolled her eyes. “Fine.” She grabbed the phone and started ordering.

I stood back in the doorway watching Emmett drool over Rose who hadn’t looked at him a second time; her eyes were on Alice as she called the pizza place. Jazz and I walked all the way into the kitchen and I headed toward Bella and Rose.

I peripherally saw Bella starting to shift her body to get down but I decided to lean back

between her legs; feeling her shift back further onto the counter and away from me. I decided to pick at Em a little.

“So, Rose could you please pay attention to my friend over there before he leaves a pool of slobber on my mom’s kitchen floor?” Rose smirked and looked over at Em.

“Screw you dude!” Emmett spit out. “Why don’t you worry about yourself and get the balls to turn around and tell B...” I knew where he was headed and I moved to him quickly to cut him off from finishing. I don’t know when Emmett got so observant, but he had picked up on my behavior when it came to a certain beautiful brunette.

“Don’t be that way Emmett, she’s over here now.” I had seen Rose move to where Em stood.

“It’s about time you got your fine ass over here.” Em said squeezing her. Rose giggled.

I turned back and saw the Bella was now standing with Alice, waiting for her to finish the call.

“Jesus Christ! Could you guys have been any louder?” Alice slammed the phone down. “I could barely hear what the retarded guy on the other end of the phone was saying. Shit!” We all cracked up at her tantrum.

Once the pizza had arrived and we had all eaten in the kitchen; talking about random things. Mostly about college and Rose’s first year there. Then they all headed upstairs for bed. I couldn’t help but let my eyes linger on Bella as she walked up the steps.

Before Alice got all the way upstairs she yelled back down to us. “You guys had better have costumes for tomorrow if you plan on being here for the party!”

I rolled my eyes and kept eating with the guys.

After Alice making us move furniture around the house a thousand times we finally got to take a breather and relax before the party. The three of us headed upstairs for showers and to lie around relaxing until we had to get into our costumes.

Emmett had run out last night after eating and gotten three costumes; The Three Musketeers; at first I thought he was crazy, but then I realized it was perfect for us. Plus we got to play with swords and what guy wouldn’t love that.

We got into costume and headed downstairs after my mom attacked with the camera for fifteen minutes. Guests started arriving so I started answering the door. Mike, Jessica, and Eric were first to come. While I was talking with Mike and Eric, Emmett decided it was time for another sword fight so Jasper and he were going at it; that was when Alice made her presence known.

“Oh god, could you grow up?” Alice yelled. I turned to see Alice in her costume.

“What the hell are you wearing?” I asked her in a hushed tone.

“My Alice in Wonderland costume” She curtsied.

“Where’s the rest of it at?” I pulled on her skirt.

“Stop it, you’ll mess it up.” She pouted. “Please my cheerleading skirts are shorter than this Edward.” I wanted to cry after she made that statement. “Could you please try to let me be an adult for tonight?” I groaned.

“Bella” I heard someone yell and I looked over. I watched Bella turn around and walk toward her parents who were in costume. *Jesus Christ! What was she wearing? That has to be Alice’s work. I need to thank Alice and kill her at the same time. Ugh!*

I turned away as quickly as my eyes would allow me to be met full on with Alice’s smirk.

“What?”

“Don’t ‘what’ me. You and I both know what.” She smiled at me.

“I have no idea what you are talking about.” She was about to say something but Bella yelled for her.

“We aren’t finished Eddie.” She winked and headed over to Bella. That was when I saw my parents dressed up and almost fell over laughing. My dad looked hilarious with the Gomez mustache; it was priceless.

More people arrived and the house was packing full. The dance area was full and going strong; Alice had gotten a good DJ. Walking around to get some drinks I saw Rose, Alice, and Bella dancing together. It took me back to the night at the beach that I saw Bella; not Bella the little girl, but Bella the grown woman. My body was having an instant reaction to the thoughts, so I quickly headed off to the upstairs bathroom to splash cold water on my face.

I was coming down the back stairs to the kitchen to grab the drinks that I initially was going for when I heard Alice and Bella talking in hushed tones in the kitchen. I stopped before they could see or realize that I was there.

“No, seriously, just to hang out and talk; you know we do enjoy each other’s company and friendship. It doesn’t have to be physical.” Alice had a sad tone to her voice. I almost walked out to comfort her, but Bella spoke-up.

“I know Al, I just don’t want him to hurt you.”, “You be careful with your heart your hear me?”, “So what is this favor? Am I supposed to take him out somewhere with me and you will be there waiting?”

“Umm...no.” Alice sounded evasive. “I um...Ineedyoutodistractedward.” She rushed through it, but she wanted her to distract me? I think I could handle that. I smirked.

“You want me to do what? Alice I don’t think that’s a good idea...”

“Please, please, please Bella, I promise to make it up to you.”

“You OWE ME!”, “BIG TIME!”

“I know, I know.”

“Here’s the deal. Where are you and Jasper going to ‘talk’?” *What?!?! Jasper!?? I fucking knew it! I’m gonna kill that bastard!* I was about to react until I heard the next part of the conversation.

“The pool house.” Alice said eagerly.

“Okay, well, I’ll keep an eye on Edward. If and only IF he seems to be headed that way will I intervene and keep him distracted. You got it? So keep your guard up and your ears working.” *So if I head to the pool house she has to distract me...hmmm...I think I could accept Jasper and Alice. Am I really willing to sell out the protection of my little sister?*

“No problem and thank you so much Bella.”

“Yeah, yeah, yeah...no go find lover boy, you home wrecker!” I almost lost it when Bella called her that.

I heard footsteps and when I thought it was clear I stepped out and into the kitchen. Alice was walking toward me. Her eyes got large. *Still willing to sell out little sister?? NOPE!*

“Where do you think you are going Alice?” I crossed my arms.

“Um...no where why?” She walked toward the fridge as if that was her destination.

“Look, I’m going to be honest here.” She turned quickly to me. “I realize that you and Jasper have some thing going on.”

“Edward, it’s not what you think. I swear. We are just friends.” Her eyes were so sad that I had to reach out and hug her.

“Al, I don’t like it. He is my friend and I love him like a brother, but I know guys. He has a girlfriend Al, and I don’t want him hurting or playing with you. Do you understand?” She looked up to me.

“Edward, please just trust me. I am not going to do anything wrong. We are friends and that is it. Maybe I wish it was more, but to be friends is good enough if that is all we can have.” Her eyes were pleading with me and I realized that while I still want to protect her, I needed to let her make her own decisions too. *Plus I am the one who is drooling all over himself over her best friend.*

“Be careful Alice. And if anything happens, you come tell me. I’ll kill the fucker!” She smiled and hugged me tightly. Then she bounded off like she was looking for someone; I assumed Jasper.

“Jasper is over in the far left corner of the living room.” Alice spun around.

“Oh, okay. I need to find Bella though.” She bit her lip to not smile.

“Why?” I asked smirking. There was no way I was going to let her ruin the part of the deal that she had with Bella. She could tell Bella after I have been ‘distracted’ for awhile.

“Because I need to tell her something.” She tried to get out of the room quickly to find her.

“I can tell her for you if I see her?” Alice spun on her heels.

“Uh..no that’s okay.” Then I saw Jasper’s head coming this direction. *Thank you Jasper!*

“Oh, okay.” I slid around her and headed out to the mass of people. I figured that once Jasper and Alice got together she would head straight somewhere with him to hang out.

I moved quickly through the crowd and there she was; but she wasn’t alone. Jacob Black was standing with her talking and making her laugh. *Damn it.* I headed over but he had pulled her on to the dance floor before I could get to them.

I had to watch then grind and move in synchronization to the music; it made my stomach knot up instantly and I wanted to kill the jerk. When I saw his hand slip onto her hip and down onto her thigh I was ready to break some fingers. However, Bella looked uncomfortable. *Yes!* I decided to act quickly. I walked over to where Eric and Mike were and stood for a few minutes and then said, loud enough that I knew Bella could hear me, “Where the hell is Jasper?” I pretended to look around for him. “I’ll talk to you guys a little later, I’m gonna go find Jazz.”

It was perfect. I headed straight for the kitchen and after standing there for about a minute Bella appeared. She stood there in all her beauty in a tiny dress. I internally groaned and imagined all the ways I could get it off of her and what she would look like with it off. I unconsciously licked my lips.

“Hey” she said; clearly trying to think of a way to distract me.

“Hi.” I tried not to smirk. “Have you seen Jasper around?”

“Umm...no. Are you sure he isn’t in the living room mixed up in the party?” She gestured like she was trying to get me to go back out there.

“No, I looked around but haven’t seen him. Maybe he’s outside.” I headed for the door.

“Um. Edward wait.” I smiled before composing my face and turning around.

“Yeah?” I asked innocently.

“I-Um...I really like this song; come and dance with me. You can look for Jasper later. Come on.” She put her hand out and that was it; the chance to touch her and be close to her. *Score one for team Edward.*

I grabbed her hand knowing the electrical charge that I was going to feel from her and pulled her to the middle of the group and pulled her to me tightly. I heard a small gasp from her and I smiled as I started to move and she moved with me.

When the song changed she started to pull back and walk away, but I grabbed her arm and pulled her along with me out of the crowd.

“Edward?” I didn’t respond. “Edward, where are you going?”

Once I pulled her through the kitchen to the back patio I turned to her with a smile. “Just where it’s quiet that’s all. Why?” I watched her eyes shift to the pool house and then back to me quickly. She fidgeted slightly and then seemed to collect her thoughts.

“You kind of surprised me by grabbing me and dragging me that’s all, so I wanted to know where you were taking me.” She kept looking away from me and I would catch her glance to the pool house. *God it was so wrong, but this was too much fun.* She shivered slightly being outside with such little on.

“We could always head over to the pool house to hang out” I turned to walk that direction but felt her hand on my arm.

“N-no. Let’s just go back inside okay?” She smiled quickly and turned to go back in. *Oh not yet Bella. Not yet.*

“It’s so loud in there, how can I talk to you? I’m not going to scream a conversation. Come on.” I held my hand out.

She furrowed her brow and looked at my hand. “The kitchen isn’t that bad, let’s go in there.” She opened the door and was stepping in when I got an idea.

I followed behind her and then wrapped her arm in mine pulling her toward the back stairs. “I’ve got a better idea. It’s still too loud in the kitchen.”

“Ed-Edward I think we should stay with the party.” She tugged her arm away a little, but I held securely.

“You can help me see if Jasper is hiding out up here somewhere.” I shrugged and kept climbing.

“Uh, Okay.”

Once we got to the top of the stairs we walked down the hall and I yelled for Jasper; looking inside some rooms just to keep the act up. Bella even started yelling with me a couple of times. I almost burst into a fit of laughter; she was really trying to keep this up for Alice.

“I don’t think anyone is up here, maybe he’s down in the group; we should go check.” She turned to head toward the stairs, but I put my arm up on the wall blocking her. She turned around with a shocked look on her face.

“E-edward, what...” she was stumbling her words out; obviously nervous.

“Bella, where’s Jasper?” She gave me an unreadable look. “I know that you know where he is, so just tell me.”

“I don’t know...”

“Bella, Bella, you are not a good liar.” I smirked at her. “Why don’t you tell me where Jasper and my sister are?”

“Uh..what? Alice? What does she have to do with...” I started laughing.

“So you are going to keep up the lie for them?” I pulled my arm back. “Hmmm...you’ve been pretty eager to keep me from the pool house, so I think that I have my answer already.” I turned to walk away, but I felt two arms grab my arm and shoulder; spinning me around.

Before I could say anything to her; Bella’s lips crashed onto mine.

Instinctually I wrapped my arms around her waist and pulled her closer to me as close as I could get her into my body. The smell, her smell, was all around me. I prodded her lower lip with my tongue eagerly and when she granted me access I became greedy to her taste. Our lips and tongues synchronized. Our bodies were pressed tightly together. I could feel my arousal building and if I didn’t shift my hips soon she would feel it to.

I couldn’t pull away. One hand slid up her back between her shoulder blades as I tasted her mouth hungrily. The most erotic part was that she wasn’t pulling away either. Her hands had slid up my forearms to my shoulders; and I could feel them slipping up my neck towards my hair. I moaned as her fingers were exploring me.

As I began walking our connected figures toward the door next to us voices came from down the hall. She broke away; I slid my lips over her jaw and toward her ear. The voices got closer. *I didn’t care; I had her in my arms and it was so perfect, so right.*

Her hands were back to my forearms and were pushing me away. “Edward someone is coming.” I hated that she was doing it but I had to respect her wishes. I stood back from her and I knew that I had lust seeping from every pore and one look at me would tell her how much I wanted her, but Bella was looking down the hall toward the approaching voices.

One more shove and we were completely separate; I hated the loss of contact with her. Bella quickly turned and headed for the back stairs; disappearing before I could calm myself enough to go after her.

Fuck Edward! What is wrong with you?!

#####

Chapter: 14

Chapter 14 – What if I don’t want to?

BPOV

Oh my God! Alice owes me big time! I just humiliated myself to save her ass. I’m going to kill her for this. Edward probably thinks that I am a fucking idiot. I didn’t even look back as I headed down the back stairs and straight to the pool house. Edward didn’t seem to be following me; thank God. I do not need any more humiliation.

I walked in and saw Alice and Jasper sitting facing each other on the couch. Alice turned her head quickly and smiled. “Hey” Then she saw my face. “What’s wrong?”

“You so owe me Alice!” I shouted.

“What are you talking about?” She actually looked genuinely confused. “Jasper could you give us a minute.” Jasper excused himself then Alice turned to me. “What the hell is going on?”

“Edward is what is going on; I’ve been distracting him for you.” I sat and put my head in my hands. I felt like an ass.

“What?!” Alice looked at me shocked. “But Edward knows about Jasper and my friendship. He confronted me about it after we talked.”

I looked up at her with wide eyes. *Oh god, I was an even bigger idiot. I was distracting him without a reason to. He really thinks I’m a..... WAIT!* “What? He knew?”

Alice nodded. “What happened...tell me from beginning to end.”

So I told Alice the whole unedited story. Her mouth was hanging open when I was done and my hands were back to covering my face. Then she got a smirk on her face.

“Wait, you kissed Edward?” Alice said shocked.

“Is that all you heard?” I looked up at her exasperated. “Did you not get the part that your brother totally played me for the past couple of hours?”

“Yeah, but geez Bells you actually did that to help me out. Even if he did know, I still owe you big time for going that far.” She smiled and then started laughing.

“I’m glad that I amuse you Alice. Your brother is a jerk by the way!” I rolled my eyes; a hot jerk, but still a jerk. “I can’t even face him, I’m going home.”

“NO STOP” Alice grabbed me before I could get up. “Don’t you get it? He is completely in to you Bella.”

“What? There is no way that Edwa...” Then I paused to think. *He didn’t stop me. He didn’t push me away and he didn’t want to let go of me when I tried to pull away. And if I am being honest with myself, I could still feel the heat on my jaw where his lips traced and his taste. Mmm...the way he tasted was like sex and honey.*

“Hello...Bella?” Alice was waving her hand in my face.

“He didn’t push me away.” I said to her with a blank expression.

“Exactly.” Alice beamed. “This is great!” she started bouncing.

“Alice calm down. It was just a kiss and I initiated it, not him.” I rolled my eyes and stood up.

“Doesn’t matter” she sang as we left the pool house.

We walked arm in arm toward the house when Alice stopped short; there was Edward standing against the house on the patio. *Shit.* I tensed up and Alice rubbed my back. She whispered “You can do this. Just talk to him.”

“Hey Edward.” Alice smiled innocently. “Bells, I’m gonna go see if I can find Rose. Meet me on the dance floor in fifteen tramp.” She winked after she passed Edward and he couldn’t see her.

“Hey” He said.

“Um..” I bit my lip. “Hey.”

“Look” I started and “Bella” he started at the same time. I knew I would lose my nerve so I just kept talking.

“Edward, let’s just not talk about it, okay?” I went to walk around him. He grabbed my arm.

“Bella wait.” I turned around.

“Seriously, Edward.” I took a deep breath before continuing. “I know that you knew where Alice was and were messing with me.” I watched his face fall for a second. “I’m sorry about what happened; I was trying to distract you for Alice.” I sighed lightly feeling the redness creep over my face. “I really don’t appreciate you messing with me about Alice’s whereabouts either. So let’s just call it even and forget about it ok?” I turned to walk away again; even though every hair on my body was standing up and my fingers twitched to run through his hair.

“Isabella, what if I don’t want to forget about it?” He spit out quickly. I stopped, my breath catching, and he kept talking; though I didn’t turn around. “I have been thinking about you since the night we came back to Forks to the beach fire.” He paused. “I’m sorry about messing around and lying about Alice. I didn’t realize that it would get as far as it did, and well to be honest when it did get to the kiss there was no way I could stop.” I felt his hand on my arm and I turned around.

“Edward, we barely know each other. I mean I’ve known you since I was a kid, but we don’t know each other. You are my best friend’s big brother; that’s what you are. I’m your little sister’s best friend.” I knew that the physical attraction was intense; even now with him so close I had to bite my lip and force my hands to stay at my sides so that I didn’t do a repeat of our previous encounter.

“I think we should change that then” he slid his arm around my waist, flashed a crooked smile and pulled me close to him. *Oh god...he even smelled like sex and honey. Fuck me!*

“I don’t know...” he cut me off by kissing me quickly.

“Sorry. I couldn’t help it.” He said giving me that damn amazing crooked smile again. *Think clean thoughts, think clean thoughts. Don’t think about licking his neck, his stomach, his....UGH! Clean thoughts Bella!* “I think that we should get to know each other; beyond big brother and sister’s best friend.”

He entwined his fingers with mine and pulled me back into the house with him. The rest of the party Edward made sure that we were together. I went to dance with Rose and Alice for a little while, but Edward was never far from me. He was serious about us getting to know each other and pulled me off to a quieter corner of the party to talk about me, him, school, his career plan, books, and movies. Alice kept watching us and smiling large every time Edward touch me or move closer to me.

After the last guest left the party Alice, Rose and I went upstairs to get cleaned up and changed. Once we were all showered and in pajamas we stretched out across Alice’s bed.

“So Bella, what’s going on with you and Edward?” Rose raised her eyebrow.

“Nothing, we are just friends.” I shrugged and buried my head into my arms; I was tired from the night.

“Yeah right” Rose laughed.

“Since the slut won’t tell you about her attacking my brother, I will.” Alice giggled. My head shot up and I grabbed a pillow tossing it as Alice’s head.

“It was all you and your brother’s fault ‘home-wrecker’!” I buried my head again and Rose was cracking up. Alice scowled at me and tossed the pillow back at me.

“Okay, someone please tell me what the fuck is going on!” Rose pleaded through her laughter.

Alice went into the whole story; which I had to add some things to that she exaggerated or left out. Rose was quiet and confused for a moment, but then she smirked. “So, Bella has got herself a boyfriend.” She chuckled. “Edward and Bella, sitting in a tree...” She sang until the pillow now took its turn against her head.

“Shut up. We are friends okay?” I huffed at them.

“Oh come on Bells, spill! You know it’s more than that; I saw the way you too were tonight; you brother whore!” Alice laughed. I glared at her.

“UGH! Can’t we just get to sleep?” I looked at both of them and saw that it was not going to stop. I sighed and sat up Indian style. “Okay, fine. We kissed; it was the most intense kiss that I have ever had in my life.” I blushed. “Obviously he is beyond attractive and he actually seems to be interested in me. But...”

“But what Bella?” Alice asked crinkling her forehead.

“But...he is away at college Alice. I am still in my senior year. I don’t think that long distance is a good deal or fair for either of us. I am eighteen years old for God’s sake, not thirty, and he is only twenty one. It’s just best to be friends. And that is what I had told him tonight before we came up here.” I shrugged.

“My God Bella, you seriously are like an old woman trapped in a hot young girls body aren’t you?” Rose teased.

“I’m just realistic Rose.” I twisted my face; Rose always teased me for acting like an old maid. It didn’t hurt, but it was the one thing that would kind of bother me when she teased me.

“Bella, I’m not trying to hurt your feelings, far from it. But Christ, you have a hot god-like piece of ass panting and drooling all over you and instead of jumping on that you get all ‘rational’. Could you act like a teenager just once before the ‘teen’ is no longer attached to your age?” She laid back on the bed in a huff.

I bit my lip and then smirked. “Not all of us got the whores-r-us training like you Hale.” She shot up quickly glaring at me.

“Oh you will pay for that one Swan!” She jumped off the bed and ran throwing open Alice’s bedroom door. “OH EDWARD! EDWARD, BELLA.....” Before she could finish I had grabbed her pulling her back to Alice’s bed; kicking the door closed behind us. We all fell into a fit of laughter on Alice’s bed before falling asleep.

The next day brought us a massive mess to clean up. After getting dressed into some sweats and t-shirts we headed downstairs to clean up. Jasper and Edward appeared not too long after we had started cleaning. I was leaning forward over the kitchen counters wiping them down when I felt arms wrap around my waist; I straightened up and he pulled me tightly to him.

Leaning into my ear he spoke softly. “Good morning.” I shivered at his breath on my ear and neck.

“G-good morning.” I smiled internally. He let go and walked over to grab something from the fridge.

“Did you sleep well?”

I threw the wet rag into the sink and turned to answer his question. He stood leaned up against the fridge looking too good for someone who just got out of bed. His hair was even messier; which only intensified my fingers twitching to grab onto it. He also had that damn crooked smile that ignited a pulsing heat between my legs. “Yeah I did. You?”

He smiled. “Wonderfully.”

“That’s good.” I said smiling and then walked out to help Alice with the dining room. Truth is that if I stayed in that kitchen I knew that I would attack him. The urge to smell and taste his sweet honey-sex was too overwhelming.

“Kitchen is done, what is my next assignment sergeant slaughter?” I stood saluting Alice.

She rolled her eyes at me. “Help me get all this garbage picked up?” I stood still saluting her. “At ease soldier.” She chuckled.

We continued to clean for the next couple of hours. Jasper, Edward, and Emmett helped move the furniture back into the right places. After it was done, we knew it was time to say good bye to Rose and to the guys too; they needed to get back to Seattle.

Emmett insisted that Rose go back with them instead of going separately by herself. She agreed a little eagerly; I could tell that Rose may have found herself a permanent man for a change.

Jasper had pulled Alice into the kitchen to say a private goodbye while I watched Emmett argue with Rose all the way to the car about helping her with her bags; which she would let him carry. I stood shaking my head when I was pulled into the house and drug into the living room; I tripped over a rug but he kept me upright.

“Uh...hi.” I said to him as he turned to face me.

He didn’t say a word he leaned forward, slipped his hand behind my neck and pulled me to his lips. Edward moved slowly but intently against my mouth. His other hand slid to my lower back pulling me into his chest roughly; instinctually my hands went to his forearms and I gasped.

My gasp was the opportunity he needed to slip his tongue into my mouth; massaging my tongue with his. I slid my hands into his hair and gripped it forcefully. He moaned into my mouth and moved me backward against the living room wall; pressing his body into mine firmly. His hands had slipped to my hips and then he grabbed the back of my upper thigh and pulled me up the wall; I could barely touch the floor with my toes. He pressed further into me and I could feel his arousal against my center. I lightly bit his lower lip and he moaned my name into my mouth as he tilted his hips into me further. I groaned.

“Ah-hem” My head shot up to see Emmett clearing his head. Edward hadn’t put me down and his lips were pressed against my neck.

“What do you want Emmett?” Edward growled into my neck. I could feel my face go completely red; no definitely maroon in this situation.

“Come on lover boy, we need to get going.” Emmett chuckled.

“I’ll be there in a minute.” Edward growled again and I tried to push him back; but his grip only tightened and I buried my face in his shoulder and neck from embarrassment.

“Well hurry the fuck up dude; besides you can’t fuck her in your parent’s living room; well at least not when they will be coming here any second to tell you goodbye.” Emmett laughed as he walked away.

Edward’s mouth started moving across my neck and jaw. “Um...Edward, you have to go.” He mumbled something that sounded like okay. I started to push him back a little. “I really don’t want your parents to walk in here and...” He sighed heavily and placed his forehead against my shoulder.

“It’s your fault.” He looked at me to see my questioning look. “You’re too damn tempting.” He smiled.

“Yeah well, what happened to our conversation about being friends?” I raised my eyebrow and smirked at him.

“What?” He asked innocently as he let me get back onto my own feet again. “Friends hug and kiss goodbye.” He smiled and kissed my forehead.

“Uh-huh.” I silently laughed; my shoulders shaking.

“Seriously, I just wanted to say goodbye, but I got a little carried away.” There was the fucking

crooked smile that made me want to climb up his body and slide down him like a firehouse pole.

Grabbing my hand he led me back outside where everyone was waiting around the car and saying good bye. I ran to Rose and squeezed her tightly.

“I’m going to miss you.” I felt the tears forming at the corners of my eyes.

“I’ll be home for Thanksgiving and Christmas, and that’s not too long from now.” She smiled at me and we hugged tighter.

I hugged Em and Jasper goodbye.

As they all climbed in the car Edward stood in front of me. “What no hug for me?” He smirked.

I shook my head and hugged him. He tilted his head down and I felt his tongue slide across my ear. I pulled back quickly, face filling up with pink tint. He smiled and got into his car and they were gone; something felt oddly missing from me. An ache was forming and I wasn’t exactly positive, but I think it was because of not having him close to me.

#####

Chapter: 15

Chapter 15 – Thanksgiving Break

Between working and school November had flown by quickly. Thanksgiving was right around the corner and Rose would be arriving this weekend.

Edward and I had text and emailed. We never called each other. For me I was just still nervous about this ‘thing’ going on between us. However, getting to know each other more had been going really well and I felt like we really were much better friends; friends who happen to be extremely physically attracted to each other.

The Cullen’s, the McCarty’s and my family had decided to join together for Thanksgiving. Esme, Sue, and Alice had been extremely preoccupied with planning for the dinner. This at least left me a lot of spare time to work on some projects that I had going on. I also got to spend a lot of time with Marie; she was getting so big so fast.

When the weekend had finally arrived I was so antsy waiting for Rose to get home; I had missed her so much and couldn’t wait until we were all back together again. I was grabbing a diet soda out of the refrigerator when Charlie came in the door with armfuls of luggage and Rose behind him.

I quickly sat my soda on the table. “Yeah!” I ran and basically tackled Rose. We fell to the floor laughing.

“You girls” Charlie shook his head as he continued to take the luggage up to our room.

“I’m so excited that you are home again.” I offered her my hand to help her up.

“Me too” she smiled large.

“ROSE!” Alice came bounding up to her through the front door. She jumped into Rose’s arms and hugged her. “We are all together again...yeah!” Rose put Alice down and we all headed upstairs; I grabbed my soda on the way up.

“So, what have you two been up to for the past month?” Rose sat on her bed Indian style.

“Same old, same old.” Alice said waving her hand back and forth before sitting onto my bed next to me. “What about you?”

“Well, mainly classes, but there were a couple of amazing parties.” Rose smiled and crinkled her nose.

“I am so jealous!” Alice shrieked. “Tell me all about them, please.”

“Well they are typically like the parties here, but they are at frat houses or other houses. You know, no parents, nothing. They can get pretty crazy and sometimes out of control, but I’ve been hanging out with Bree; who is really cool, we are in the same dorm building.” Then Rose got a flash on her face that usually meant she had an idea. “You know I think that we should all just rent a house together when you guys come next year.”

“You mean IF we come there next year.” Alice corrected her.

“Oh like you both won’t be able to get in to Seattle, give me a break.” Rose rolled her eyes.

“Besides I think that it would be better than those damn dorms. I don’t care what people say about getting the ‘experience’, it sucks.” She laughed.

We all sat around catching up for about an hour when the conversation took an uncomfortable turn. “So Bella, how’s your ‘friendship’ with Edward?” Rose giggled while putting sarcasm into the work friendship.

“Har-Har. We’ve learned more about each other, become better friends.” I shrugged and racked my brain to think of a way to change the subject.

“So how often do you guys talk?” Rose was in full interrogation mode and Alice was just smirking at me.

“Well, we just email and text. We haven’t talked per say.” I shrugged again.

“Woah...wait!” Rose put her hands up. “He hasn’t called you? You haven’t called him? I don’t understand.” I heard Alice laugh, since she had given me this same reaction a few weeks ago.

“We just haven’t and I feel weird calling him, so we just talk other ways.” I threw myself back onto my bed knowing that this was not the end of it.

“That’s just ridiculous. Get some balls and call him. Fuck!” Rose exclaimed.

“And just when I thought I was happy that you were home....” I said sarcastically.

Rose threw a pillow at me and it landed onto my face. Alice laughed and I threw it at her.

“Fine, how are you and Emmett doing Rose? It was pretty obvious that you were actually becoming a one man kind of girl the last time you were in.” I smirked at her and Rose blushed.

“HOLY SHIT! Did Rosalie Hale just blush over a guy?!” Alice exclaimed. I rolled to my side and held my head up with my hand.

“Oh shut it!” Rose stuck her tongue out. “I just like him, a lot.” She mumbled the end of her comment.

“Oh. My. God.” Alice and I seemed to say at exactly the same time and then started giggling.

“You mean to say that Rosalie Hale has finally been tied down?” I said overly dramatic. “Has hell frozen over? Do we need to send out notifications to all the ‘little black book’ contacts?” Before I could say anything else Rose was on top of me tickling me.

“What was that you were saying smart ass?!” Rose laughed.

“Oh god, please stop. Rose! Rohhhhhooooossss!” I screamed in between fits of laughter. “STOPPPP!! PPLLLLEASE!!! Someone HELP!! Helppppp MEeeeeeeeeeeee!!!”

“Oh no way are you getting off that easy!” Rose continued her threat to my sides until I felt her disappear quickly from on top of me.

I was still trying to catch my breath before I realized who had helped me.

“Now as hot as that was really starting to make me, watching two girls roll around on a bed together and all, the screaming was just a bit too much for my ears.” Emmett smiled large until Rose smacked him in his arm. He just pulled her close and down onto her bed to sit with him. The way he looked at her was priceless; he was completely smitten.

I sat up and shoved Alice in the arm. “Thanks for the help skank!” I laughed.

She smiled. "What? I am Switzerland! You know...neutral territory!" I shoved her again and she slid off the bed which made us start laughing again.

When I felt my bed dip down on the left of me I looked over and saw Edward smirking at me as he lied back onto my bed. I smiled and turned back to Alice. *Dear God give me the strength not to just jump on top of him and do horribly wonderful things to his body with my friends in this room! Please!!*

"So where did you guys come from?" Alice asked as she climbed back onto my bed and crawled over to lay her head on Edward's stomach. "I thought you guys weren't coming until Sunday?"

"We didn't have to wait on Jasper, since he went home to his family in Texas, so we left earlier." Emmett shrugged and pulled Rose down to lay with him on her bed.

"Okay, so why do you two think that you can break into my bedroom?" Rose teased.

"Hey! The balcony doors were unlocked. I swear I knocked but you just didn't hear over Bella's screaming." Emmett pleaded his case.

"Why do I still not believe you huh?" Rose looked at him with one eyebrow raised. Emmett kissed that eyebrow before curling up next to her and closing his eyes. It was way too cute.

After hanging out for about an hour talking; Alice, Edward, and Emmett headed over to the Cullen's place and Rose and I went downstairs to see if Sue needed us for anything.

Charlie was seated at the table waiting for dinner when we got downstairs. We sat with him at the table and he talked with Rose about school and Rose asked him about how things were going at the police station and around town. Dinner was pleasant and it felt nice to have us all there; though Leah and Seth would have made it complete. Leah was not feeling well and Seth would not be home for Thanksgiving; instead he was staying near school because of his job.

The day before Thanksgiving I had retreated to my room working on some of my computer projects. Sue and Rose were baking; everyone knew that cooking and I were not a good idea, so there was no objection when I disappeared to my room.

I heard footsteps coming across the tree house and figured it was Alice; I kept my back turned and continued working on the program script. I was typing a final sequence when I felt two arms lift me up from my seat; I squeaked and clutched for something to hold onto.

I snapped my head around. "Edward? Wha.." Before I could finish he had sat down in my chair and sat me on his lap. I shook my head. "What are you doing?" I asked still having my head turned in his direction.

"Just visiting." He smiled. *Damn him.* "So what are you doing?" He nodded toward my screen.

I readjusted myself and turned back to my computer. While I was trying to explain what I was

doing I felt him brush my hair around and over my left shoulder. Then I felt his lips press to the back of my neck.

“E-edward?”

“Hmm?” He hummed into the crook of where my neck and shoulder meet. Instinctually I rolled my head to the left as his hand slid around my waist and up my body between my breasts and he caressed me around my throat as his other arm was around my waist and his lips still worked my skin.

“Ah-are, Mmm...Are you even paying attention to what I am saying?” It was hard to speak at first and still came out a little breathless, but I got it out.

“Hun-uh” He shook his head and I could feel the smile spread on his lips against my neck. “You are too distracting.” He grazed his teeth across my skin and I completely forgot what I had even asked him.

I leaned my head back onto his left shoulder as his lips moved across my skin in a fiery trail. Once I couldn’t take it any longer I turned myself around; straddling him in the chair. I attacked his mouth instantly and my hands reached directly for his hair. *God he tasted and smelled even better than my memory recalled.* When his hands knotted into my hair pulling me closer to him I wanted to devour him. His urgent hands moved around my body gripping and massaging me until he found home on my hips.

When he pulled my hips into him roughly I moaned into his mouth; my aching center already fully aroused at what his mouth had been doing. I could feel how stiff he was and the sensation from our friction urged me to lock my feet around the chair and rock into him rhythmically.

He tightened his hold on my hips and kept the rhythm that I had begun. When air was necessary I pulled back to inhale deeply as he moved his mouth across my collarbone. I was breathing heavily and reclaimed his mouth; I wanted dominance of his mouth.

The rhythm between us seemed to intensify and the friction had built up an inferno inside of me. I moaned Edward’s name as he pulled back from our kiss and placed his forehead against my shoulder and groaned. “Fuck Bella...I’m gonna...” and then a feral moan ripped up from his chest as the inferno inside of me combusted throughout my body.

Edward wrapped his arms around my waist pulling me tightly as he rested his head with his face buried into my neck; both of us panting. My hands were still tightly laced into his hair and I slowly released my fingers sliding my hands down his neck to his shoulders; he shivered and I smiled knowing that I had made him feel like this.

“Bella, you are....” He paused and sighed. “I don’t know what you are but I fucking love it!” I felt him kiss my neck again and pull me even tighter.

“Ed-ward” I gasped. “That’s – *huh*- a little tight.” I breathed unevenly.

His grip loosened. “Sorry.” His hands moved and he cupped my face with both of his hands. “You know that I have never...” He paused looking slightly nervous. “I’ll just say that this was a first.” His crooked smile appeared right before his lips were against mine; however, this time the kiss wasn’t urgent it was slow and passionately sweet. I could feel the fire moving from my lips into my cheeks, down my neck, and through my chest where my heart was trying to leap from my chest. Our tongues felt as if they were dancing together.

“BELLA!”

I jumped up quickly from his lap. “Shit! It’s Sue.” I said in hushed voice.

He stood quickly and pulled his shirt down over himself, quickly kissed my forehead and headed out of my balcony toward his house.

I ran my fingers through my hair quickly and straightened out my clothes.

“Bella!” Sue said loudly as I opened the door to see her face. “Oh...sorry.” She smiled. “Can you come help us in the kitchen?”

“Me?” I pointed at myself with a look of surprise.

“For clean-up duty.” She smirked.

“Ah-hah.” I smiled at her. I followed her down the stairs still feeling a little flustered from Edward and Sue.

“Are you feeling okay dear?” Sue asked me with concern on her face.

“Yeah, why?” I responded as I scrubbed some mixing bowls.

“You look a little flushed.” She continued wiping down the counter tops. “I hope you aren’t coming down with anything.

I smirked at the dishwater in front of me and felt a nudge to my right side. I looked up and saw Rose eyeing me suspiciously. “What?” I mouthed almost silently.

“What were you up to?” she whispered.

I shook my head. “Nothing” I whispered back. Her face was all I needed to see to know that she wasn’t buying it.

Once the kitchen was clean I tried to avoid being alone with Rose, so I was hanging around Charlie in the living room. That was until Rose came in grabbed my arm and pulled me up to our room.

“Geez Rose, did you need to talk about something?” I sprawled out over my bed.

“Okay, spill it Swan!” Rose eyed me. “Tell me why you looked so flustered when you came downstairs and what was that smirk about?”

“I have no idea what you are talking about” I answered innocently, though my smile gave me away.

“Damn it Bella! Please spill!” She sat next to me on my bed and playfully slapped my ass.

“Well...” I sat up; back against headboard and legs crossed over each other straight in front of me. “I had a surprise visitor while you were helping Sue. That’s all.” I bit my bottom lip.

“You little slut!” Rose laughed. “Tell me everything and I mean all details.”

I laughed at her and then began telling her about Edward’s surprise visit. She asked me a million questions and tried to analyze every angle. I just chuckled at her.

“Bella, do you know how hot that is?” Rose looked at me with a wide smile.

I shrugged. “Seriously Bella, I would’ve never guessed you had it in you. Well, okay I knew it was in there somewhere, but I would never have thought that it would come out of you so easily. I’ve been such a bad influence...I’m so proud!” Rose giggled and I joined in with her.

After getting a shower and changing into some pajama bottoms and a tank top, I climbed under the blankets of my bed and got comfortable. I heard the bedroom door close and new it was Rose coming to climb into bed; however, I felt my mattress shift so I rolled over. Rose was sitting on the edge of my bed.

“What’s up?” I looked up at her.

“Okay, so I closed and locked our door.” She smiled mischievously. I knew where this was going.

“Are you coming back tonight or do I have to cover through breakfast too?” I rolled my eyes.

“I’m going to try to be here before breakfast.” She smiled and hugged me. “I have my cell. Text me if I’m not here when you wake up. Please?”

“Of course I will. Now get out of here whore.” I laughed and rolled back over.

“Thanks love!” Rose yelled as she headed out the balcony doors.

I swear that our parents had to be completely stupid if they didn’t realize what goes on around here. I’m betting that they tried to just pretend that they didn’t realize it. I was laughing internally when I heard whispers outside the balcony doors. I rolled over to look at the doors.

A figured entered and walked toward me. “That was a quickie. Are you losing your touch?” I laughed quietly.

“I hope not” Was the most velvety voiced response that I received.

“Edward?” I smiled.

I felt my blankets move as he climbed into bed with me and wrapped himself around me. “Who else would it be? Are there other guys I should know about?” He said with mock anger.

“No, of course not dork.” I whispered.

“You know I don’t think I’ve been called a dork since I was in grade school.” He laughed quietly. The feel of his breath across my skin made every cell in my body instantly ignite and I had to hold in the urge to moan.

“Well now you have” I said right before his lips pressed to mine sweetly but firmly.

“You don’t mind sharing your bed do you?” He paused as he pulled my leg up over his hip and rolled us so that I was lying against his chest. “I couldn’t sleep in my bed when you are close enough to be next to me.” He kissed the top of my head.

We talked in hushed tones for what felt like was the entire night. I don’t even remember when I fell asleep, but I do remember waking up.

Knock...Knock...

Knock...Knock...”Bella, Rose.”

Thud...Thud...”Bella, Rose!!”

I shot straight up. *FUCK! It’s Charlie!* My eyes fell directly to Edward. “Isabella, Rosalie, answer me! Why is the door locked?!” *Shit, shit, shit!*

A/N: So what's going to happen with Charlie and what will happen during Thanksgiving dinner?? Anyone want to guess or make some suggestions? Let me know.

#####

Chapter: 16

A/N: don't forget to nominate your favorite stories for the Eddie and Bellie Awards. Link to the website to nominate is on my profile. Also voting starts July 15th. I have already nominated my favorites!!!

Also, HAPPY BIRTHDAY GLENDA!!!!

Chapter 16 – Thanksgiving

“Isabella Marie Swan!” Charlie pounded on the door. “Rosalie Ellen Hale!”

“Just a minute! I’m coming!” I yelled back and felt Edward jump out of my bed.

“Where are you going?” I whispered as I stood and grabbed my robe and a towel. I threw the robe on and wrapped the towel around my head.

“Shhh.....” Edward whispered as he jumped into my closet and shut the door behind him.

I unlocked the door and opened it halfway, keeping my body behind the door.

“What the hell...” Charlie saw the towel on my head.

“I was getting trying to get ready for the day, dad.” I rolled my eyes “I’m still not completely dressed.”

“Oh, well...where is Rose?” He nodded to her bed; which was made. *Shit!*

“She ran over to Alice’s to get her up so she could come get dressed with us” I shrugged. Mentally I was giving myself a high-five for such fast thinking.

“Well, your mother needs help downstairs so hurry up.” He paused; still processing my story obviously. “We need to get over to the Cullen’s in a couple of hours.” He eyed me for another moment before turning and heading back downstairs.

I closed the door and leaned against it with my eyes closed; letting out a huge breath that I had been holding. I felt Edward’s lips on my neck as I opened my eyes. I pushed him softly.

”Are you crazy?! Charlie almost caught you in here once; you need to get back over to your house.” I pulled off the robe and tossed it over the bed and as I yanked the towel from my head I felt his arms circle around my waist.

He kissed the back of my neck “If that’s what you want...” I turned and he was giving me a pout face.

I sighed “You are killing me.”

He smiled and attacked my lips; pushing us down onto my bed. “I’m afraid that it is you that are

killing me dear Bella. You really need to stop that lip biting thing.” He hovered over me and traced my lips with his fingers.

“What lip biting thing?” Then I realized I was biting my lip. *Huh...I guess I never realized I did that.*

He laughed and kissed me. “You will be the death of me.”

“That is definitely a possibility with Chief Swan” I raised my eyebrows at him for emphasis. “He does carry a loaded weapon.” I winked.

Kissing my forehead as he got up and grabbing a sweatshirt from the top of my bed. I hadn’t even seen him wearing it when he had gotten here or did I see him take it off.

“I’ll see you later this afternoon” He said quietly as he snuck out across the balcony and tree house.

I sat down to call Rose immediately.

After I got out of the shower for real Rose was sitting on her bed with Alice. I was towel drying my hair as I walked toward the clothes that Alice and Rose had obviously decided I was wearing today.

“So Bells...” Alice started and a smirk on her face. “My brother came climbing into my room awfully early this morning with quite a large smile on his face.”

“Really?” I responded innocently and turned to grab my clothes off my bed.

“Oh come on tramp” Rose yelled as she headed to the bathroom. “Spill the details!”

“There are no details” I rolled my eyes. “He showed up last night after the whore in the bathroom left to fuck Em senseless.” I laughed as a lotion bottle came flying out of the bathroom toward me. “I actually thought that it was Rose coming back for something and was completely surprised that it was Edward instead.” I shrugged.

“And?” Alice prodded.

“And your brother made himself awfully comfortable in my bed.” I gave Alice a stern look.

“And just how comfortable would that be?” Alice raised an eyebrow; clearly fighting a smile.

“Comfortable to snore all night” I stuck my tongue out at her. “Nothing happened, he just slept here.”

“God Bella, when are you going to just jump his gorgeous ass?!” Rose vented as she walked out of the bathroom.

“Hey I think I jumped him enough earlier yesterday!” I shot back and both of them laughed.

“Oh just get naked with him already!” Rose chuckled.

“Ewww....that is my brother” Alice crinkled her face. “Not to say that I don’t think that he is a fine specimen; however, ewwww, just ewwww.”

Rose and I laughed as we got our clothes on. Alice grabbed me by the hand so she could play stylist as Rose sat at her vanity putting on her make-up.

Once we were all dressed, Alice headed over to her house and Rose and I went down to help Sue. Rose and Sue finished up some last minute cooking and preparation, and I started packing up the food so it could be taken next door.

There was a knock on the door and I went to answer it while Rose and Sue finished in the kitchen. I pulled open the door.

“Hey Em.” I said smiling. “Happy Thanksgiving!”

“Happy Turkey Day Bella!” He said loudly and walked in. I was closing the door when I felt it shove back toward me.

“Are you going to shut the door on me?” his velvety voice came from around the door as he peeked his head around and smiled at me.

“Sorry.” I blushed. “I didn’t see you there with Em.”

He smiled and touched my cheek. “I love that.” Before I could ask him what he meant Sue interrupted.

“I am so glad that your mother sent you and Emmett over to help” she unloaded some boxes into Edward’s arms and Emmet came out with bags and boxes in his arms.

“This smells amazing” Emmett sniffed loudly. I saw Rose roll her eyes as she walked behind him.

I held the door while they both took the food next door. Charlie appeared next to me holding my coat out to me. “Thanks Dad.”

“Yep” he answered and I watched him study my face for a minute longer than necessary. I turned and walked out behind Sue.

Walking into the Cullen’s house for a holiday was like walking into a picture from a magazine about holiday decorating. Everything was perfect and everything had its place.

“Welcome!” Esme came out from the kitchen looking perfectly put together. “Happy Thanksgiving!” Carol, Emmett’s mother came in following Esme.

“Oh Esme the place looks fantastic as always” Sue responded and hugged her. We each took turns hugging and then walked toward the kitchen.

“Charlie, the men are in the basement with the new TV watching football” Esme smiled and Charlie politely excused himself.

“Football? YES! Thank God for Thanksgiving Day football!” Emmett cheered and grabbed Rose’s hand pulling her with him.

I sat down next to Alice in the kitchen. I noticed that she seemed a little sad.

I bumped her shoulder with mine gently. “What’s up?” She shook her head. “Oh come on. You know better than to try that crap, what’s going on?” She stood up and gestured for me to follow her.

Once we got to the living room we sat together on the couch. “What is going on? Are you okay?”

“I just, I don’t know. This is going to sound so stupid!” She put her face in her hands.

“Just tell me.” I shook her. “It’s killing me that something is wrong.”

“I feel left out.” She sighed and looked into her lap.

“Huh? I’m confused.”

“Well, Rose has Em and they are so happy, and then there is you and Edward. I just feel so left out.” She sighed heavily.

“Oh Alice” I hugged her firmly. “I mean...you know that I am not ‘with’ Edward right? We are friends.”

Alice rolled her eyes. “Friends?” She gave me a funny look.

“You know what I mean. It’s just that we aren’t a ‘couple’ per say.” I sighed.

“Jesus Bella, he would probably take you to Vegas and marry you at this point. Are you that clueless? He is so yours; regardless if you have taken on an official title.” I smiled slightly at this, but it faded when I saw Alice’s face again.

I hugged her tightly. “It will come.” I pulled her face up to look directly at me. “You are to amazing for it not to come.” She smiled at me and we sat hugging for awhile.

Carlisle decided that we should have an early dinner, so we all congregated around the dining

room table. Carlisle sat at one end, Esme at the other, Sue and Charlie sat side by side and across from Carol and Ronald McCarty. Rose sat next to Emmett. I sat next to Alice and Edward sat across from me.

I looked up to him but he didn't look at me. We all began dinner and light conversation; Edward still wouldn't look at me or say anything to me. I wasn't sure what was going on.

After dinner Rose, Alice and I cleared the table and did the dishes.

"Okay what is up with you bitches? You are both so quiet." Rose stood looking at Alice and I with her arms crossed over her chest.

"I'm just lost in my own thoughts, that's all." I shrugged. I looked to Alice.

"I just wish I had someone" Alice shrugged. Rose hugged her and held on to her as she questioned me more.

"So what are you so caught up thinking about?"

"Just that Edward was acting different. It was like he was ignoring me throughout dinner." I shrugged again. "Maybe I'm just reading too much into it."

"Maybe." Rose answered. "Okay, let's grab some pie and cookies for girl time upstairs." She smiled large and we started grabbing forks and desserts.

We got up to Alice's room and lay everything out on the floor. "Shit! We forgot the cool whip." Rose exclaimed.

"I'll go get it." I yelled back as I ran down the back stairs to the kitchen.

I pulled the cool whip out of the freezer and shut the freezer door with my elbow. I turned around and jumped; dropping the cool whip container to the floor. "Jesus Christ Edward!" I put my hand on my chest and tried to catch my breath.

He stood there with a scowl on his face.

"What's wrong?" I asked.

He just looked at me and even though the scowl softened it was still intense. I leaned down to pick up the cool whip but he grabbed my arm. "What?" I asked again.

"We are friends" he said partially as a question but also as a fact. I nodded. "Is that all I am?" I stood staring at him; his green eyes seemed to be burning into mine. I swallowed loudly. "Is it Bella?"

I pulled my arm away gently; he let go but put both hands up on the fridge on either side of my

head. “What do you want me to say Edward?” His eyes darkened. With anger? “I mean, we agreed to be friends, to get to know each other, or am I the only one that remembers?”

His hand smacked the fridge beside my head “Damn it Bella.” I jumped and when he realized I had jumped he put his hand on my face. “I’m sorry.” Then he smiled largely. “You’re doing it again.”

“H-huh? What?”

“Biting that lip.”

Just as his lips were about to meet mine, someone cleared their throat. “Ahem!”

A/N: I’m sorry for the short chapter and for the cliff hanger, but I wanted to get an update posted, plus I’m not completely sure yet who is going to be the interrupter. I have a few different ideas and still need to work them out.

I promise to update soon.

#####

Chapter: 17

Chapter 17 – Interruptions and Lingerie

“Ahem!”

EPOV

I quickly turned my head to see my father standing with his eyebrows raised and looking back and forth between Bella and me. *Thank God it wasn’t Charlie!* I took my hands from either side of her head and took a step back from her. I looked to Bella who was biting her damn lip again. *Ugh! She needs to stop.* Her eyes were locked on my father.

“Edward, do you think that I can talk with you for a moment?” He motioned his head for me to come with him. “Excuse us Bella.” He smiled.

I grabbed her hand and squeezed it as she looked at me quickly in panic and forced a smile. As I left the kitchen I glanced back to see her bending over to pick up the cool whip she dropped. I battled internally to stop myself from running back and pressing into her lifted ass.

Carlisle snapped me out of my dirty thoughts. “What is going on Edward?” His arms were

crossed over his chest.

“Nothing” I shrugged.

He sighed heavily running his hand through his hair, something that I clearly had gotten from him. “Bella is close to this family and I don’t want there to be any problems because of something inappropriate...” I cut him off.

“There is nothing inappropriate about this...” His turn to cut me off.

“Oh, I thought it was nothing?” He smirked at me.

I sighed and dropped my head. “Look it’s kind of...I guess kind of new.”

“How is it ‘kind of new’? How long has it been going on?” He took a seat at the dining room table and motioned for me to sit with him.

“For me or for her?” I chuckled slightly at my answer. He smiled at me.

“I see.”

“I don’t know if you do” it was my turn to run my hand through my hair. “Ever since we came back over the summer and I saw her; I’ve seen her differently than when she was the little kid running around with Alice. I thought it was just feeling protective like I am with Alice, but then I realized that it’s not that simple; it is way more complicated than that.” I sighed. “I tried to just be friends with her dad, I really have tried to just be friends, and technically we still are, but I think I want more.”

“Son, I love you, you know that right?” I nodded. “You have a pretty ‘unique’ record with women and this isn’t just someone or something you can play around with; she is family Edward.” I nodded again. *Was he really trying to lecture me about who Bella was? I knew that if I fucked around with this that I would be better off if the gates of hell opened up and swallowed me than to face my family or hers for that matter.* “If you are both happy then of course I am happy for you, but take this slow Edward. It looked pretty intense when I walked in; she is still young.” He smiled, stood, walked over and patted me on the back as he went to the kitchen.

I stood up; needing to talk to Bella, among other things.

BPOV

After picking up the cool whip and heading upstairs with it quickly, I threw myself into Alice’s room.

“What the fuck took so long? Did you have to make the cool whip yourself?” Rose laughed.

“Edward happened” I said as I pushed the cool whip to Rose; whose eyes got big and gleamed.

“Don’t get too excited; Carlisle happened too.” I covered my face with my hands.

Alice spit ice cream out everywhere in a spurt. “What?!” she choked out.

“Oh you heard me” I said through my palms.

“What did Carlisle do?” Rose asked at the same time Alice asked “What were you guys doing when he walked in?”

“He had me pinned against the fridge about to kiss me and then Carlisle brought his presence to our attention.” I sighed. “He asked Edward to come and talk to him and I headed back here as fast as possible.” I pulled the spoon from the cool whip container and shoved it in my mouth.

“Oh. My. God.” Alice said bug eyed. Her mouth opened again, but then there was a knock at the door; all of our heads turned.

“If that is your dad I am going to die” I whispered to Alice who shook her head in agreement.

“Bella?” I exhaled in relief; it was Edward.

I got up and opened the door to be met with his crooked smile.

“Hey” I said.

“Lip biting” He smirked and I immediately stopped. “That’s better; unless you want Alice and Rose to watch me...”

“Uh, is there a reason you came up here?” I asked to interrupt what he was about to say.

“Everything is okay. I just wanted to tell you that.” He smiled again.

“Okay, thanks.” I stood there and felt suddenly self conscious.

Edward leaned his head in the room “Al, Rose” both of them looked to him; as if they weren’t already listening to the conversation “I’ll return her in a few minutes.”

“Huh, what are....” He grabbed my arm, pulled me towards him and pulled Alice’s door shut behind me. “What are you...” he cut me off.

“This” he smiled crooked as he pressed his body into mine against Alice’s door and captured my lips with his. *Oh god, he smelled so good; honey, sex, honey, sex...Mmhmm.* I felt him smile against my lips and realized that I had made that noise out loud and into his mouth.

When his tongue entered my mouth I grabbed him by the back of the neck and pulled him closer to me; his taste was superb. *Forget the fucking cool whip I’d like him on my ice cream; or ice cream on him....Mmhmm.* He smiled again. *I really need to keep my sounds under control.*

He pulled back smiling and I unknowingly was biting my lip. His forehead was pressed to mine as his fingers traced my lip “Bella, if you insist on biting your lip like that then you are going to have to be the one to explain to my sister why a few minutes turned into a few days.” I pulled my lip out of my mouth and he licked it. My eyelids fluttered. He made one quicker kiss to my mouth and then slowly walked backwards; away from him. “I’ll miss you.” He winked and turned around.

I went back into Alice’s room; closing the door behind me.

After being bombarded with questions from Alice and Rose we settled back into ‘girl talk’. Once it was late; Rose and I headed over to our room to get ready for bed and settled into bed. I tossed and turned for about twenty minutes before I finally felt sleep start to take over.

A muffled scream woke me from my sleep. I opened my eyes quickly starting to sit up when I saw Rose smacking the shit out of Emmett while she yelled at him in a hushed voice. “You fucking idiot!” smack “That is not funny” smack “What if Charlie would’ve come in here?” smack

“Oww woman, quit hitting me!” He grabbed her arms and pinned them to her sides as he pushed her back on the bed and lay down with her. “Can I help it if I don’t want to spend one night without you?” I heard Rose grumble at him and I had to cover my mouth so she didn’t hear me laughing.

I rolled over and smacked my head against someone else’s head. “FUCK!” I yelled as Edward groaned and covered my mouth.

“Do you want Charlie to come in here and shoot me?” He whispered and moved his hand from my mouth.

“How the hell did you get into my bed without me knowing?” I was still rubbing my head.

“Is it my fault that you sleep like the dead? I think not.” He moved my hand and kissed my forehead. “That kind of scares me by the way.”

“Scares you?” I questioned as I felt him shift and then he pulled me over to lie on his chest.

“Yeah that someone can get into your bed so easily.” I smacked his chest and he groaned then laughed. “How’s your head?” he continued to laugh quietly.

“If I had known you were in my bed I would’ve hit you harder” I grumbled and tried to move away from him; he held tight, not allowing me to move.

“That’s not very nice.” He started tickling me.

“Stop” I squealed out. “Unless you want everyone to wake up.”

“Keep it down over there!” Emmett yelled across the room.

“Shut up!” Edward yelled back.

“So what, you guys are tag teaming now?” I questioned.

“Nah...just partners in crime.” He kissed the top of my head and we fell asleep after that.

Emmett had to return for football so he and Edward left the next day to head back to Seattle. Rose stayed another night before she headed back. Alice and I had a lazy rainy Sunday; watching movies and eating junk food.

Monday arrived too quickly and it was time for school again.

The weeks flew by and Christmas was coming upon us quickly. Alice had dragged me along shopping so many times that I was sure that all the stores at the mall had her credit card number memorized. She insisted on stopping at every store there was in the damn place.

I had gotten most of my shopping done for Christmas when I something dawned on me. “Alice?”

“Yes dear” she responded while digging through another rack of jeans.

“Edward isn’t...um...getting me something for Christmas is he?” I was embarrassed to ask, but also nervous about the answer.

“Of course he will. Why...” Her head shot up to look at me.

“I have the perfect gift Bells!” She shouted, grabbed my arm and pulled me into the store that I would not have thought to get Edward a gift; in fact I was still not thinking about it.

“I don’t think it will fit him.” I laughed and she rolled her eyes.

“It’s for you, for him” She smiled sweetly.

“Alice you are out of your mind, NO!” She held it up for me to look at. “NO Alice!”

“Come on Bella, it is perfect and you know it!” She smiled widely.

“No Alice” I crossed my arms over my chest in refusal.

“He will absolutely love it Bella and you can’t deny that.” She was trying that tactic now.

I sighed. “No Alice.”

“Tell me I’m wrong.” She shrugged her shoulders.

I was silent.

“That’s what I thought!” She wiggled her brow once. “Now get it!”

“No Alice! I certainly am not going to buy that; you can buy it for Jasper!” I threw back at her.

“I already got his present. Unlike some people, not that I’ll mention any names, I remembered” She winked at me.

I scoffed at her. “You are evil woman!”

“I’ve heard that before” she smiled. “So?!”

“Um...let me think about it...NO!”

“Damn it Bella! Quit being so stupid and buy the fucking thing now!” She shoved it into my arms.

“This” I held it up “Is not me. I don’t do” waving my hand around in front of it “this!” I crinkled my face up.

She rolled her eyes. “Give me a fucking break and channel your inner slut for fuck’s sake!” She grabbed the red lacy bra and underwear set that came with a ‘festive’ Santa hat and stomped to the counter throwing it down and paying for it.

“I am not wearing that” I grumbled.

“Oh yes you will, unless you want me to really put together one of my evil plans” she smirked.

“You wouldn’t?!” I grimaced at her.

“Try and test me Bella, just try.” Then she started laughing.

“You evil little traitor!” I yelled at her.

“Flattery will get you no where dear” she giggled as we walked through the mall to more stores she wanted to ‘browse’ through.

#####

Chapter: 18

Chapter 18 – The Holidays

Christmas

I had survived the many shopping trips that Alice had taken me on and I had gotten out of the trips with Sue and Leah by babysitting Marie. I had gone crazy with gifts for Marie; I had basically gone a little Alice.

Alice and I were off from school on break for the holidays; we didn't have to go back until after New Years. Rose was arriving tomorrow with Edward and Emmett; Christmas Eve. They also would be around until the day after the New Year.

Christmas Eve I was sitting at Alice's computer working on upgrades to get rid of some of the glitches in her fashion program when she burst into her room.

"Guess what?!" she almost sang as she threw herself down onto her bed.

"What?" I mumbled out over the pen that I clenched between my teeth.

"Jasper is coming here" she smiled brightly.

"He's not spending the holidays with his family?" I had pulled the pen out of my mouth.

"I guess his family is going overseas for the holidays and he didn't want to" she shrugged; still smiling. "By the way, don't leave that pen here. The last thing I want is your chewed up pen left for me to grab. Ew!" I licked the pen and threw it at her. "Oh God that is so gross Bella!" I laughed.

"Let Christmas begin...the best present of all has arrived!" Rose shouted as she entered Al's room from the balcony. We both ran and hugged her.

We spent the next couple of hours catching up with each other. Al and I talked about school, Rose talked about her classes and then she told us about her and Em. Apparently Emmett had finally decided that Rose was going to agree that they were an official couple; no more dating other people.

"It's official; hell has frozen over" Alice laughed.

"Hold on" I put my hands up "So you are telling me that you, Rosalie one-nighter Hale, have stepped down from super slut to monogamous girlfriend?" I pretended to gasp in shock and she grabbed the magazine next to her tossing it at me.

"Shut the hell up!" she laughed. Al rolled around her bed laughing and I ducked so I wasn't smacked by the magazine; though I straightened up with a huge smile on my face.

“Hey! That’s the new issue of Vogue!” Alice cried; Rose and I busted into hysterics.

Alice and Rose had headed downstairs to ‘watch a movie’; which was really code for Alice trying to run into Jasper. I finished the last upgrade to her computer then headed to meet them downstairs as I promised I would.

I was halfway to the main staircase when I heard a door open. Before I could look toward the noise I felt arms around me pulling me; Edward. After he got me into his room he smiled at me widely. “I have the best timing ever!” he beamed proud of himself. I shook my head. “What? I do.” He shrugged.

“Well, hello...” I was cut off by the sound of him using his foot to push his door closed.

“That’s not a proper greeting” he placed a kiss on my lips. “I’ve been gone for weeks” he kissed me hard and then slipped his tongue into the crease between my lips. I opened and ran my hands up to his hair. As I gripped his hair he groaned into my mouth and guided us in the direction of his bed.

The back of my legs met with the side of the bed and he bent over me as he leaned us onto the bed. Once my back was on the bed he didn’t hesitate lying between my legs putting some of his weight on me.

He leaned on his right forearm as his left hand cupped my face. His hand moved from my face, down my neck, until he had cupped my breast and lightly ran his thumb back and forth over my nipple; which was already aroused by his kiss. I arched my back pushing my breast into his hand and he pressed his erection into my center.

Knock...knock...knock... “Edward I know you have her in there let her go! We are watching a movie, so get moving.” Alice yelled as she pounded on the door again.

Edward dropped his head onto my shoulder. “Damn cock-block!” he grumbled into my ear. My body shook with laughter. “Oh God Bella, don’t shake like that or I definitely won’t let you up.”

“We could skip the movie” I whispered into his ear as he growled low and kissed my neck.

“COME ON” Alice yelled. “I will break in and drag you guys out!”

“Damn it Alice! We. Are. Coming!” Edward shouted at the door.

He huffed and pulled me up with him as he stood. He kissed my forehead and then he opened the door.

Alice stood there with her eyebrow raised at him. “See. We are coming” he was completely irritated and I had to fight to not laugh.

“Well it’s about damn time” Alice poked him in the arm as she walked passed him.

Edward took my hand and led me with him to the basement where Alice had set up the movie. Rose and Emmett were curled up in the oversized leather chair that Esme had bought to replace what Edward had taken to Seattle. Jasper was sitting on the matching love seat; as Alice flitted around the room putting in a DVD, setting up bowls of popcorn, drinks, and then heading to the lights. Edward pulled me down to the couch; immediately pulling us into lying down with my back against his chest.

It was only the afternoon, but when Alice turned off the lights the lack of windows made the TV the only form of lighting. Alice sat next to Jasper; though there was an obvious space between them.

About twenty minutes into the movie Edward pulled me tighter to him and I could feel that he was either still hard from early or had gotten hard again. "That is what you do to me" he whispered lightly into my ear. His breath across my ear caused me to shiver. "Are you cold?" he asked as he threw a blanket over us.

"No I'm not...."

"Oh, I think you are" he cut me off and then after pulling the blanket up under my arm I felt his hand slip up the bare skin of my side and my breast mold to his hand over my bra. I had to fight back a moan as he placed his lips on my neck. "How quiet do you think you can be?" he whispered. My eyes widened and I turned my head to look at him. His face was a large smirk.

"Don't you...." It was too late I felt his hand slip under my bra and graze my nipple. I bit my lip to hold in the gasp of pleasure from his hands. "What did I tell you about that lip biting?" he growled quietly into my ear.

His hand slid down my stomach and he had unbuttoned my pants before I could even speak. I grabbed his hand to stop him, but he just leaned in and kissed me deeply before moving his lips over my jaw and down my neck. My grip loosened from the sensation of his lips on my skin. I kept biting my lip to hold back the moans. His fingers traveled to my center and ran lightly back and forth over my underwear. "Mmm...you are already getting wet" he growled again into my ear.

I quickly returned my eyes in the direction of the TV and then darted them around the room to see if anyone was aware of what he was doing to me. I was both relieved and slightly shocked to see that Rose and Emmett were wrapped up in a blanket kissing passionately, and from the movements of their blanket Rose was too busy to pay attention to me. Alice was in a blanket by herself, but was leaned up against Jasper. If I hadn't been looking so intensely to avoid my own embarrassment of getting caught I would have never noticed that Jasper's arm had disappeared into Alice's blanket and his head was leaned down to the side of her head.

Then Edward slid his fingers past the barrier of my underwear and pushed one finger into me. Unconsciously my hips slightly bucked into his hand and a heavy breath escaped my lips. I felt him chuckle behind me as he continued to assault my neck with his lips, teeth and tongue.

Not to be the only one about to explode. I reached back and gripped him through his pants; he gasped against my shoulder. “Oh god” he whispered “Bella...” I used my ring and pinkie finger to push his zipper down and slide my hand into his pants. He was straining against his boxers so I slid my hand through the front and ran my fingers lightly down his shaft. Edward pushed forward at my touch; pressing his hard cock into the palm of my hand. I gripped him firmly and stroked him repetitively. He was breathing heavily into my shoulder as I quickened my motions.

He withdrew his finger and then pushed two into me while his thumb worked circles on my swollen clit. “I want” low gasp “you to come with me” he whispered. I felt my release come to the edge and at the same time his teeth lightly bit down on my shoulder and his dick twitched in my hand as I felt his release dampen his boxers. I quickly fell over the edge and he had to press his lips to mine firmly to keep me from moaning. I used his release to pump him until his final shudder as we both came down from our high.

He moved his hand to rest on my stomach and I brought my arm back around; he grabbed my hand and squeezed. “I feel like a high school kid again” he laughed quietly.

“I am a high school kid” I nudged him with my elbow.

“Too bad they don’t make you wear uniforms” he chuckled and I slapped his arm. “Oh come on, that would be extremely hot.” I turned to look at him and he was smirking. I was about to say something back to his remark but his lips preoccupied me.

Esme called down to all of us when dinner was ready and everyone stretched out. Everyone also seemed to have to do some readjusting of clothing. I didn’t even want to think about what had gone on under everybody else’s blankets; it was enough to know what I had participated in.

“I’ll meet you upstairs” he said as he kissed my cheek and then he headed for the restroom.

I headed upstairs to the restroom to clean up for dinner.

Christmas Eve dinner was uneventful and the typical routine. Charlie, Sue, Leah, Sam, Marie, and Seth all were there and the conversation was light and happy.

After dinner Charlie and Sue had Rose and me leave with them. Sue would not be happy if we didn’t all wake up together at the house; she even had Sam and Leah staying over with Marie. Not that I was complaining; having Marie there was going to be a great time.

Rose and I had played with Marie until we had exhausted her; then we told everyone goodnight and headed to bed. We decided that we would exchange our gifts on Christmas Eve instead of in the morning with everyone else, so after we were ready for bed we sat on Rose’s bed and had our exchange. Alice showed up right as we were opening them up.

“I can’t believe that you guys didn’t wait for me” she pouted.

“We didn’t know you were coming over” Rose rolled her eyes at her.

“Sorry Al” I stuck my bottom lip out.

“I’ll forgive you if you give me my present” she winked at us.

Alice sat and joined our gift exchange. We all laid together on the bed talking, but before I knew it I was being shaken.

“What?” I groaned.

“Bells get up” Alice whispered.

“Why?” I rolled to my side and covered my head.

“Just get up” Alice shook me again.

“Fine. I’m up.” I hit the bed with my hands as I sat up. “What the hell do you want?”

Al was giggling quietly and then pointed to my bed. There was Edward. He patted the bed for me to come over. I looked over to see that Rose was gone.

“Bye” Alice winked as she headed out on the balcony.

I threw myself down onto my bed, still not completely awake.

“Remind me to never wake you up” Edward laughed in a hushed tone.

“Shut up” I groaned. “Couldn’t you just leave me over there to sleep?”

I felt his lips on my neck and I shivered; he chuckled.

“I can’t give you your birthday gift if you are asleep” he whispered and I felt him place something on my stomach.

“Edwwarrdd” I whined “I don’t like you getting me a gift.”

“Too bad, now open it” he nudged me.

I sighed, sat up, and reached to my lap; where it had rolled when I sat up. It was a small square box. I lifted so I could see it. I bit my lip; slightly nervous about opening a small box that could only hold a couple of things: a ring (shudder), necklace, or earrings.

Edward kissed me firmly. I looked at him when he pulled away. “Lip biting” he smiled at me and shrugged “It’s your fault.” I shook my head.

Returning my attention to the box; I pulled off the bow and the paper. I pulled the box open and a velvety blue case slipped out. I hesitated before I flipped open the box. Then I saw a small circle charm attached to a thin silver chain.

Edward picked it up out of the box and wrapped it around my wrist fastening it. "It's called the Eternal Circle" he spoke quietly before he looked up into my eyes. "I'm eternally yours" he leaned in and kissed me firmly, but quickly. My heart melted and a fire started to blaze in the pit of my stomach.

"Stay here" I ordered and walked toward my bathroom; stopping at my closet along the way.

I looked into the pink bag and took a deep breath. *If I ever had the nerve to do this, then its now.* I slipped off my pajamas and slid the red lace over my body. Looking into the mirror I positioned the Santa hat on my head before taking one last deep breath and opening the door to my room.

Edward had been lying back on my bed with his arms behind his head; until he saw me. He sat straight up and inched to the edge of the bed as I got closer. I hesitated and his hands reached out; pulling me to him quickly. "My God you are gorgeous" he whispered as he appraised me. I was nervous and getting self conscious. "Mmm...and the lip biting it completely the icing on the cake" he whispered out as he pulled me down to straddle his lap.

His lips attacked my collarbone as one hand ran across my ass and the other held me by the small of my back. Pulling me closer to him I reached into his hair and fisted handfuls. He moaned and rolled us so that he was lying on top of me.

I pushed his shirt off of his body and he loosened his pants; pushing them quickly off. His hands ran over my body like a fiery ghost. My body ached for him and his erection throbbed against the inside of my thigh; I instantly felt my center dampen in arousal.

Grabbing his hair tighter I pulled his mouth to mine and assaulted him hungrily. He replied with an equal amount of hunger. Sliding his fingers into the sides of the red lace he quickly sat back on his heels and pulled it off at the same time. I hooked my toes into his boxers and they slid off as he moved back over my body; planting wet fiery kisses on his way back to my mouth.

Once his mouth was on my again I could feel him at my entrance twitching; it was driving me crazy. He pulled away for a moment and when he returned I heard a wrapper rip. He repositioned at my entrance and his tip slipped between my folds; he didn't move and I was going crazy. I pushed my hips up and he slowly, achingly entered me.

I felt every long hard inch of him as he became completely buried in me. I heard his sharp intake of breath once he was completely in. He kissed the flesh between my neck and shoulder as he started to thrust slowly in and out of me. My left hand tightened in his hair as my right hand gripped onto his shoulder; I tightly wrapped my legs around his waist and rocked my hips forward to meet his thrusts.

"Fuck Bella..." he moaned "you are perfect; everything perfect." He attacked my mouth again as

I moaned.

“Oh God Edward” I moaned a little too loudly.

“Shh...” he whispered. I moaned again and he placed his mouth over mine to muffle the sounds that I could not hold back. He felt amazing and the coil that had tightened in my stomach was about to burst. I felt his fingers find my clit and start to rub rhythmically.

“Shit...oh..mhmm...” I bit my lip hard enough to hurt as the coil burst like fireworks going off in my body.

Soon following me, Edward moaned out my name as he thrust into me a couple more times and his face contorted into the hottest look of ecstasy and release. He collapsed onto me and then rolled over onto his side; wrapping his arm around me.

“You are perfect” he murmured into the bare skin of my shoulder.

We fell asleep not too long after.

“Wake up!” *Not this again. Jesus!* “Bells wake up!” This time it was Rose. Then realization hit me and I sat up quickly; remembering to keep the blanket pulled up over my chest.

I looked down on my right and there he was; this gorgeous perfect man who had a touch that could melt a glacier.

I looked back to Rose who was grabbing clothes from her bags. Without looking at me she yelled in a hushed tone. “You need to get him out of here before someone comes popping in.”

“I know” I whispered back.

I heard the bathroom door close and the shower start. I turned back to look at him; he was beautiful.

Then the bedroom door opened. I quickly threw the blanket over Edward and laid back on him; trying a weak attempt at hiding him. I felt him shift as I saw Leah’s eyes widen and then she turned away quickly.

I heard her start laughing. “Bella” she laughed so much she couldn’t finish. I could feel Edward shifting around under me and felt his go real still; realizing he was being hidden.

“Shut up Leah” I spit out, trying not to laugh with her. “Is there a reason you are entering without knocking?”

She walked into the room and shut the door behind her; I heard her click the lock on the door. Sitting down on Rose’s bed with a smirk she crossed her legs and leaned back on her palms. “So who do we have visiting us this wonderful Christmas morning?” She started giggling again.

“No one” I tried not to laugh again. “Now if you would be kind enough to get the fuck out...”

“Oh hell no, this is too perfect. I could never just walk out on this.” She smiled evilly at me.

“Leah...” the bathroom door opened and Rose walked out fully dressed with wet hair.

She looked from Leah then to me, then to the lump that is Edward. She busted out in hysterics and I couldn’t hold it any longer. I shifted off of Edward and buried my face in my pillow laughing at the situation and at my own embarrassment.

I didn’t see Leah get up, but when I looked up she was standing over my bed and grabbing the blanket that Edward was lying under. She ripped it back and her eyes widened as she looked from him to me and then back. She smirked. “Merry Christmas Edward, I see your gift exchange was last night” Leah choked out before laughing again.

He smiled and wrapped his arm around me. “Merry Christmas Leah.”

“So did Sue send you up here to get us?” Rose asked as she brushed her hair. It was like Edward wasn’t even in the room now.

“Yeah, so you better hurry” Leah turned to wink at me. “I’ll tell them to give you twenty before we bug you again.” Leah smiled at us and left the room.

“I guess I should get going” Edward sat up.

“I would think so” Rose said over her shoulder before going back into the bathroom.

I stood up wrapping myself in my sheet. Edward grabbed the sheet and pulled me toward him; kissing me deep and hard. “Merry Christmas love” he smiled and I helped him collect his clothes.

After he left I jumped in the shower and got dressed. I headed downstairs quickly to be met by everyone in the living room. “Merry Christmas” I shouted out as I found a spot near Marie.

New Years

The holidays were flying by so quickly and before I had realized it, New Years was already here. I would only have a short time left with Edward. We had spent most nights with each other; talking, kissing, and him setting my body on fire.

Christmas had really come for Alice. Jasper had broken off his relationship with Maria and he had talked to Alice about them being a couple. Alice wanted to immediately agree, but being rational won over and she told him she needed to think about it. Rose and I were pretty sure that tonight, New Years Eve, would be her night to accept him as her boyfriend instead of just a friend.

Rose and Emmett were, well, Rose and Emmett. Charlie and Sue were so fed up with telling them to keep their hands to each other that they eventually just told them to take it elsewhere. Emmett had no problem complying with their orders. It also helped that Em had taken up the habit of calling Rose the future Mrs. McCarty or his trophy wife who had brains.

Of course we were all bringing in the New Year at the Cullen's house. They had arranged a party full of family and friends. Esme and Alice had also made sure to arrange things so that the 'parents' were somewhat in their own separate party.

After a couple of drinks and when it was about fifteen minutes from the New Year, Edward pulled us away to be alone. He was heading to his room, but I pulled him down to Alice's room instead. He hesitated for a second, but I grabbed a thick blanket from Alice's room and headed out to the tree house. Edward then followed quickly.

I wrapped us up in the blanket tightly; me straddling his lap. We sat that way for ten minutes whispering to each other and kissing.

His kisses were lighting the flame in my stomach and I could control the urge to capture his lips and greedily taste his mouth. *Mmmm.....sex and honey.* I moaned into his mouth when I felt him harden between my legs.

Reaching down between us I undid his pants and pulled my dress up to my waist. Pulling him free of his pants I slid onto him and rocked back and forth; increasing my rhythm as I went. He moaned into my collarbone and licked my skin.

As the voices from the party increased with the countdown our moans increased from approaching releases. "Bella..." "E-dward..." we both gasped out as I came around him. He lifted me from his dick right as he was going to release and I used my hand to help complete his release.

"Happy New Year" I whispered as he fisted my hair and pulled me in to kiss him.

#####

Chapter: 19

Chapter 19 – End of an Era

It was crazy how quickly things had gone; the holidays passed by, the New Year had begun, and we were already approaching graduation. Rose was finishing up her first year of college, Jasper and Edward were graduating college, and Emmett had been drafted into the NFL. Alice had been

busy with the committee responsible for graduation and I had been working with my school counselor to set up my college courses; Alice and I had both been accepted to Seattle University. My computer technology teacher had also helped me get a job for the summer with a local company; helping to develop programming for their clients.

Graduation approached and Alice and I were having a combined graduation party at her house. Alice and Esme had decorated the backyard with Chinese lanterns that were lit throughout the yard. There was a ton of food and drinks. Edward, Em, and Rose had all arrived for the weekend and for the party; Rose was back for the summer.

A lot of our friends had arrived earlier in the day and we were all in the pool. Everyone was splashing around as we played pool volleyball. Edward set the ball and I hit it over; Jacob was on the opposing side and he hit it back hard, just missing Edwards head. He laughed and Edward scowled at him. When the game was over I got out of the pool to dry off and pull on my dress. I felt a light touch across my back and turned around expecting Edward; it was Jake.

“Jake stop” I scowled at him.

“What?” he smirked.

I shook my head and walked away from him. When I suddenly heard raised voices I turned back. There was Jake and Edward with looks that could kill the other one. Emmett jumped in between them and I grabbed Edward away.

“What are you doing?” I hissed at him.

“Me? What about him? He can’t just...” I cut him off.

“I handled it Edward.” I crossed my arms over my chest and looked at him sternly.

He calmed down. “I’m sorry, I just...” I pressed my lips to his and smiled.

“Just calm down; I can take care of unwanted advances.” I smiled.

“Hmmm...and what about wanted advances?” he wrapped his arms around my waist and one hand slid over my ass.

“Oh, I can handle those too” I kissed him firmly. He grabbed the back of my head before I could pull away and deepened the kiss; I felt instantly afire. I moaned slightly and I felt his smile on my lips.

The party went smoothly for the rest of the night and I attempted to keep Edward and Jake away from each other as much as possible.

“So, when are you coming to visit me?” Edward whispered into my ear as we sat together on a lounge chair by the pool.

“Um...I’m not sure” I watched his brow furrow. “I mean I have a job this summer and then Charlie and Sue got Rose and me a two week vacation in Florida as a graduation present.”

“When are you going to Florida?” he asked quietly.

“At the end of summer; sort of like our last get a way before we start college. You know?” I tilted my head to look at him. He looked annoyed.

“So you’re going to go on a vacation for two weeks, but you haven’t thought about coming to Seattle; to see me?” He wouldn’t look at me.

“Edward?” he still didn’t look. “Edward, please look at me.” he looked down; brow still furrowed. “I will be in Seattle in a few months, please don’t act as if I am trying to avoid you. I have a responsibility to the company I am going to work for; and Florida is a graduation present. It will be Alice, Rose, and I going on what could be one of our last get-a-ways for a long time.” I looked at him; pleading with my eyes that he would understand.

“I’m sorry; I guess I’m just disappointed. You’re right, it’s your summer after graduating and you guys should have some fun.” He smiled, but it wasn’t genuine.

“Edward, what did you and your friends do after graduating?” I looked away from him; I already knew the answer.

He shrugged. “We headed to Cancun for a week and then we spent the summer doing some road trips and...” he finally caught on to what I was trying to get at. “Nicely played Swan” he leaned down and kissed my head.

“You see what I mean. I just want to do some things before I have to return to another round of reality with school.” I smiled up to him and this time he smiled back genuinely. “I promise we will still see each other before the end of the summer.” I leaned up and kissed his chin; he nuzzled into me. We lay there for about an hour longer.

Summer was actually a hot one this year. Rose had gotten a part time job working with a local daycare, Al was working with her mother at her design company, and I was spending obscene amounts of time at work. The people I worked with were nice, but they were also much older than me and some weren’t pleased with the fact that programming came so easily to me.

By the time the end of summer had arrived I had kept my promise and made a weekend trip to visit Edward. We had spent most of that weekend in his apartment; more specifically his bed. The Sunday night before I left we went out to dinner and to see a movie. I left Monday morning to get back home.

It was three days before we were going to head to Florida for two weeks. I was packing clothes with Rose when Edward called.

“Hey” I answered on the second ring.

“Hey, you.” He hesitated. “Are you getting ready for your trip?”

“Yeah, Rose and I are packing now. Don’t want Al to kill us for not being ready and messing up her schedule.” I laughed.

“I wish that I could go with you” he sounded sad and disappointed.

“I wish you could too” I quickly responded.

“So what do you three have planned, or should I ask what Alice has planned?” He chuckled.

“Well, now that we have a group of people heading down with us...” he cut me off.

“A group of people?”

“Yeah. Mike and Jess, Eric and Beth, Quil and Clair, Embry, Jacob, Lauren, Kim...”

“Jacob is going with you?!” I could hear the tone he was getting.

“He’s not going ‘with me’. It’s a group of people that will be down there. I don’t even know when he is going to leave or arrive there.” I was trying to soothe his worries. I mean, didn’t he realize that he had nothing to worry about. There was no one that made me feel the way he did.

“Yeah sure” he snapped.

“What’s that supposed to mean?” I spit out. I saw Rose turn to look at me.

“You know how he is and you are going to ‘vacation’ with him. That’s just fucking great Bella.”

“I think you need to calm down. I have never given you any reason to think that anything like that would ever happen and I don’t appreciate you not trusting me.” I was getting just as angry as he was.

“It’s him I don’t trust Bella!” he shouted.

“Jesus Christ Edward, do you think that I would let him do anything? Do you think I want him to do something?” I was snapping out now.

“Bella...I just...”

“No Edward, you just didn’t think. This is why I said that being just friends would be best in the first place. Do you trust me enough to know that nothing will happen or not?”

He hesitated a little too long.

“Thanks a lot.” I hung up and screamed.

“What the hell was that?” Rose questioned.

I told her the conversation with Edward.

“I mean I get that he may feel jealous and not like it, but I also get why you are angry.” She sighed and looked at me as I was lying back on my bed.

“I tried to reassure him, but he acts as if I am going to do something or put myself in the position that something would happen. That’s not me, and I wouldn’t do that.” I sat up looking at Rose as I felt tears start to slide over my cheeks.

“Shh...it will be okay.” She wrapped an arm around me and tried to soothe me.

She couldn’t have been more wrong.

Edward and I had attempted to talk two times before I left, but each call ended with him being more jealous and angry. I finally gave up and he seemed to as well.

We left for Florida.

I didn’t hear from Edward for the entire two weeks. I called him twice, with no answer. I sent him multiple text messages and got no responses. I was miserable for the first week; though I tried to hide it. I barely even interacted with Jake the whole time; I may have seen him once or twice in passing. Alice and Rose did their best to cheer me up.

By the second week I had pushed it all out of my mind and was determined to have fun. We all ended up at a tattoo parlor and after twenty minutes of begging Rose we all went in and got matching tattoos. We decided on the Chinese symbol for friendship. Alice got hers on her foot, Rose’s was on her shoulder blade, and I had mine put on my lower back.

Arriving back to Washington was comforting until we exited the plane. Emmett was standing there and bounded up to Rose the minute we were passed security. He lifted her into a crushing hug and spun her around. Jasper slowly walked up to Alice and embraced her tightly. I was standing at the conveyor belt waiting for the luggage to start coming around when I felt a presence next to me.

I looked over and there was Edward. He didn’t say anything he just looked at me with his brow furrowed. He started to open his mouth, but I stopped him by putting my hand up.

“Don’t” he looked at me sadly. “I’m not going to do this Edward. I care about you a lot, but I won’t be ignored because you are upset. It’s not fair.” He nodded to me and tried to get the suitcase that I had just grabbed. I pulled it back from him and gave a half smile. I walked away from him and he didn’t follow me.

Welcome home. I thought to myself as I waited alone for Rose and Alice to catch up to me.

Heading off to college was rough on all of our parents. Esme and Sue were really starting to feel that the houses were too empty; Charlie hated losing his girls; and Carlisle was crushed that his baby girl was leaving for college.

After all of our goodbyes Rose, Al, and I headed to Seattle. Sue and Esme had helped us to find a small house that wasn't too expensive and it was close enough to the college for all of us. Esme and Alice did all the interior designing of course; Charlie and Carlisle just paid the bill. Our parents had paid for our first four months in the house, until we all got situated with jobs.

Alice was working for a local fashion boutique, Rose was working at a local garage as a mechanic, and I had gotten a part-time job with a local company that developed software programs for companies. We all got our college schedules for the first semester and coordinated our jobs and schedules with each other; and then we all worked out the bills between us.

I had talked to Edward a couple of times since the airport, but things were still similar. We were friendly, but neither one of us would mention our relationship. It was assumed by everyone that we were no longer 'exclusive' or really even together anymore. I called him after we got settled in the apartment, but he never called me back. I eventually just gave up and left him alone. I missed him greatly and a part of me felt like it had been ripped from me, but he only acknowledged me when he felt like talking to me and even then he really didn't say much. I let him go.

Halfway through first semester I started to struggle with one of my classes; creative writing. I had to take an English class as a requirement; however, I thought that it would be easier for me write a story rather than any other kind of English assignments. I was so fucking wrong! Yeah, I loved to read stories, but writing a story was completely different and when the professor put all the restrictions and requirements on top of it I felt as if I was drowning in the grammar.

Luckily there was bulletin board where people offered tutoring help. I found a couple of people who were English majors and tutoring was something that they could put on their resumes after college, so after talking with a couple of them I found a girl named Angela who became my savior. She also became a close friend.

Angela quickly fit into our threesome and ended up spending most days and nights at our house. The other nights she was spending with her boyfriend Ben; they had been together for three years since their senior year of high school.

Angela and I were heading into my house when I heard the phone ringing. I ran and grabbed it; it was Esme.

"Hello dear, is Alice there. I tried her cell but she didn't answer."

"No Es, she is at work. She probably had it on vibrate or turned off completely. Is anything

wrong?”

“Oh no. It’s just that I was hoping she would come home this weekend. Edward is going to be coming home and he is bringing someone with him; he wanted us all to meet her.” I froze and almost dropped the phone. “Bella?”

“Uh...yeah I’m here.” I choked out.

“Could you tell Al to give me a call to let me know?” she paused. “You know you and Rose are family, so you should think about coming in too.” She said excited.

“Um...I have to work or I would” I quickly spit out and reminded myself to sign up for extra hours this weekend.

“Oh that’s a shame. Well, if you change your mind, please come. I’ve gotta run.”

“Okay, bye Es. Love you.” We hung up.

“Are you okay?” Angela looked at me with a worried expression.

“Uh...yeah. Just a surprising conversation that’s all.” I swallowed back the bile that was threatening to come up. We hadn’t been together in months and hadn’t even spoken, yet the thought of him with someone else made me feel as if someone was squeezing all the air out of my body. The piece of me that he had taken with him had now been sent through a shredder. I shook it off.

“Is everything all right?” she asked.

I nodded, but felt the sting of tears threatening. “Bella you can talk to me...come on.” She pleaded. So I told her everything.

When I was finished she took a deep breath and hugged me.

“I just don’t get why it’s bothering me so much” I shook my head.

“It’s unfinished Bella” she patted my back. “Neither of you really every resolved your relationship or your feelings.” I heard her sigh. “I have to be honest with you.” I looked up to see her squirm nervously. “I-uh...I mean really it’s Ben, but I know Edward.” I took in a sharp breath. “I also know his girlfriend.”

“Great” I mumbled.

“Oh Bella I won’t say anything. I just didn’t want you to find out later and then think that I was....”

“Ang I would never think that about you. You are far too kind.” I smiled to her. “I just need to

suck it up and get past this, and I will.” She smiled hopefully at me.

Alice went home that weekend, though she was very apprehensive. Rose and I stayed in Seattle and worked through the weekend.

When Alice returned she didn’t say much about the weekend. “Alice you can talk about it, I’m not some psycho who is stalking your brother” I chuckled.

“I know Bells, but I just don’t want to upset you. Are you sure you are okay?”

“Yeah, I’m fine. I just had to get over it all. Now its fine.” I smiled and it was a full smile. Edward had moved on and even if there was still a twinge of pain, I was moving on too.

“Well, she is really nice and I know you would even like her” she smiled but paused to gauge my reaction.

“I’m sure that I would, especially if you like her so much” I smiled back.

“She is extremely nice and pleasant to be around. Edward seems happy too.” I smiled genuinely knowing that he was happy. “Her name is Glendaly Vazquez.”

“The model?” I sat up straighter.

“Yeah, I know right. I couldn’t believe it. I have seen her so many times in my magazines, but I got to meet her in person.” Alice beamed.

“Wow” was all I could say. Glendaly was a very popular model; almost six foot tall, dark skin, long dark hair, deep brown eyes, and absolutely gorgeous.

More months past by and we were getting into our second semester now. This was when the invitation arrived.

A/N: don't hate me!!! It's all apart of the storyline that I am working through. It's going to be a little different and a rollercoaster ride of sorts. Don't be mad...give it a chance. It's a direction that I really really want to take and after talking to my girl Glenda about it and after I gave her the full storyline she was excited about it. Especially since she get's to be with Edward. LOL LOL

#####

Chapter: 20

Chapter 20 – Every Ex-girlfriends Nightmare

Two invitations; one addressed to me and the other to Rose. The cream colored envelopes sat on the coffee table taunting me as I sat on the couch with a glass of wine in my hand. I didn't have to open them to know what they were and deep inside I knew who they were for. A hard shut of the front door snapped me out of my own thoughts.

"Wine already, really?" Rose looked at me with a smirk on her face. Then her eyes narrowed on my face and she sat down next to me; not caring that her clothes were covered in garage grime. "What's wrong Bell?"

"Nothing" I shrugged. "I brought the mail in" I motioned to the table.

Rose's eyes moved to the table and I heard her sigh. "Bella, I know that you..." I put my hand up as I swallowed a large gulp.

"Just stop" I pleaded with my eyes. "It's stupid really. We've not been together for forever; not that it was ever resolved....UGH!" I threw myself back on the couch. "Don't look at me like that!"

"Look at you like what?" Rose tried to sound innocent.

"Look at who like what?" came Alice's voice as the door closed.

"Fuck" I mumbled.

Alice walked in completely confused. I sat up and watched Rose motion to the envelopes on the table. "What are....Oh my god!" Alice walked over and ripped open one of them. "How...when....why didn't I know about this already?!"

"Alice..." Rose hissed.

Alice's eyes focused on me. "Oh shit...right." She took a seat next to me.

"Will you both stop!" I leaned forward and poured more wine into my glass. "I was just a little shocked by the...well you know what they are." I sighed. "I'm happy for him I really am Al, I just feel like I never, I mean 'we' never had any kind of closure."

Alice wrapped her arm around me. "It's okay. I understand. I'm sorry that I haven't been there enough for you over all of this" she tossed the invitation on the table.

"So when is the big day?" I rolled my eyes.

Alice grabbed the invite again and looked "Says that it's in two weeks."

My eyes widened and I almost spit wine out my nose. "They are getting married in two weeks" I

choked out.

“What?! NO!” Alice looked at me with shock and amusement. “It’s the engagement party Bella.” She rolled her eyes. “Did you think that my mother of all people would not have an engagement party?”

“She’s right” Rose added as she picked up the bottle of wine and drank directly from it. I nodded in agreement.

“So, Edward is engaged; to a super hot uber-model of all people” I sighed as I leaned back into the couch. Rose and Alice assumed similar positions. “Can you just imagine the blinding beauty of their children?” I asked into the silence that had built around us.

The both broke into laughter. I don’t know what was so funny but I found myself joining in on the hysterics.

The two weeks had passed by quicker than I wanted. I had been mentally preparing myself over that time. I knew that we had been over for some time and it wasn’t that I was angry about him moving on; it’s not like I haven’t dated other people. It’s just so...I don’t know...I think it’s just disappointing to know that I was completely ignored and forgotten the way he did with me.

Sitting in my old room made it feel even more surreal that this was all going on right now. Alice appeared on the balcony beating on the doors. I quickly unlocked and opened them.

“What the fuck asshole?!” she yelled at me as she pushed past me and hopped onto my bed.

“What did I do dickhead?!” I yelled back laughing.

“Since when are those locked?” She motioned to the French doors.

“UH...maybe since we all moved to Seattle dumbass” I said sarcastically as I plopped down next to her. We both started laughing.

“Rose still getting dressed?” I nodded. “Is that what you are wearing?” Alice appraised me closely.

“Yes, and NO I will not let you ‘fix’ me” I gave her a stern look.

“Actually I was going to tell you that you looked pretty hot and that I was proud” she shrugged and smiled.

“Okay sluts...let’s get rolling!” Rose emerged from the bathroom throwing her arms into the air and sticking out her hip like she was posing for a magazine.

It was nostalgic to cross over the tree house to Alice’s room and I felt myself hesitate and think about everything that had happened in that childhood place. I shook the thoughts off and

continued into Alice's room.

Jasper was leaned against Alice's doorframe smiling. "Well hell, do I get to escort you three fine ass ladies tonight?" his smile beamed brightly and he straightened up.

"Back it up chuck" Emmett shouted as he pushed past Jasper and wrapped his arms around Rosalie. "This gorgeous broad is mine. M – I – N – E." Rose giggled as he nuzzled her neck.

"Alice" Jasper offered his arm to her and she smiled. "Isabella" he offered his other arm to me. We both took an arm. "Well, fuck you Em, cause I've got two." He smirked and he led us downstairs to the party.

When we reached downstairs it was already a full house. Esme and Carlisle greeted Rose and I immediately with hugs, kisses, and I miss you's. It was over Esme's shoulder during our hug that I saw him for the first time in a year; I felt my breathing hitch as his eyes stared directly back into mine. Carlisle pulling me away from Esme broke our trance.

Rose linked my arm quickly. "What was that?" she whispered.

"What?" we kept whispered tones.

"You know what. I saw the way you looked at each other."

I shrugged "It's just been a long time."

"Are you sure about this?" Rose turned me to look directly into my eyes.

I nodded "As sure as I will ever be Rose, just don't leave me. Okay?" She nodded as we headed over to the happy couple.

We slowly approached the 'happy couple'. Edward had his arm around Glendaly's waist. She was even more gorgeous in person; tall, cocoa colored skin, shiny black hair, and just perfect. I caught a glimpse of the ring on her finger and swallowed all the mixed emotions. I steadied myself as we stood in front of them.

Edward turned to me and his face fell for a moment; I wasn't sure if he was unhappy that I was there or if he just thought that I would cause a problem. I ignored it. "Edward it's great to see you again" I smiled and gave him a quick one armed hug. "Glendaly it is a pleasure to meet you. Congratulations." I smiled even brighter.

"Glenda this is Bella" Edward spoke without any emotion at all.

"Oh Bella" she leaned in and hugged me "Esme and Carlisle have told me so much about you, and so has Alice" she gushed. I felt Edward stiffen at my side. "And you must be Rose?" Rose nodded in confirmation and Glendaly hugged her as well. "It is a pleasure to meet such close friends and family of Edward." Her accent was heavy and made her even more exotic. I groaned

internally. I was living the ex-girlfriend's nightmare; the one where your ex finds the hottest, nicest, and absolutely better in every way new woman.

The party was as perfect as Esme's parties always do. There was plenty of food and drink; as well as plenty of conversations. I hadn't had to talk or be near Edward since we arrived. Alice and I were sitting together watching Esme dance with Jasper to the music that the band was playing. I could see the adoration and love in Alice's eyes as she watched Jasper. I was completely envious when he would look to her with the same look. Rose and Emmett were always inseparable; there was no one else that could come between those two. It was borderline disgusting.

Jasper approached Al and reached his hand out to her as an invitation to dance. She looked at me and I pushed her up to dance with her man. "I'll be back for you too darling" Jasper winked at me; and I shook my head laughing. Jasper was a great guy and he had an amazing way of not making me feel like the third wheel.

I was getting up for another drink when I collided with another person. I felt large strong hands grab my arms to steady me. "I am so sorry..." I spit out quickly; feeling quite embarrassed.

"Don't be sorry" came a heavy Italian accent. I looked up and saw a large handsome man with olive skin, black hair, shiny hazel eyes, and a large frame. He was as tall as Edward but not as big as Emmett; though he was more muscle than Jasper. He was strikingly attractive. It took me a moment to collect my thoughts. "How is it that I have not run into you until now?" He smiled at me and tilted his head slightly.

"I, uh, I don't know" I stuttered. "I apologize for.."

"Didn't I just say not to apologize?" He smiled widely. "I should thank you for bumping into me."

"You should?" I raised my eyebrow.

"Mhmm. I wouldn't have met the most beautiful woman in the room if you hadn't" he winked at me.

I crossed my arms over my chest. "So does that line work for you often?"

He held my gaze without any emotion until he started laughing heartily. "You are feisty, aren't you?"

"It's not the first time I've been called that, or worse" I winked at him. "Now if you'll excuse me" I walked around him and headed toward the bar.

"Did you think that I was going to let you get away that easily?" he whispered into my ear and his breath made me shiver.

I shifted and turned to face him. He was smiling. “So may ask your name?”

“Yeah, you may.” I winked to him. I couldn’t believe how decent I was getting at the whole ‘flirty’ behavior; Rose and Alice would be thrilled.

He chuckled at my response. “I’m Demitri” he held his hand out to me.

“Bella” I reached out to shake his hand, but he grabbed my hand and kissed my knuckles.

“It’s a pleasure to have ‘bumped’ into you” he smiled against the back of my hand. “So is Bella short for Isabella?” I nodded. “The name suits you.” The music changed to a familiar song. “Dance with me?” He pulled me out toward the other’s that were dancing; I willingly went. I willingly spent the rest of the evening on Demitri’s arm.

After the party I was coming out of the shower when I heard thumping on the door. “Just a minute!” I yelled.

“Get your ass out here!!!” That would be Alice.

I opened the door still drying my hair with my towel. “What the fuck Al?!”

She bounded in and sat on the toilet lid. Rose was close behind and parked her ass on the bathroom countertop.

“Okay...what?!” I threw the towel to the hamper and started brushing out my hair.

“Who the hell was tall dark and fuck me?!” Rose wiggled her eyebrows.

“Tall dark and fuck me? Really Rose, what would Emmett think?”

“Emmett doesn’t need to know” she winked. “Now spill it.”

I told them about Demitri; bumping into him, the way he hit on me, our playful banter, dancing and talking. I had found out that he had been born and was raised in Italy until he was seventeen. He attended college in the US and he was currently working in Seattle running a major record label.

“He lives in Seattle?” Alice questioned.

“Yeah” I shrugged.

“What is his name?” She asked.

“I just told you...”

“No, his last name, dumbshit!”

“Oh..Demitri Forello” I finished brushing and then saw Alice’s face. “What?”

“Isabella Marie Swan, do you realize who he is?” Al stood and walked over to me stopping about a foot from me. I shook my head. Her hand went to her head in disbelief.

“Well who the fuck is he Alice?!” Rose shouted hopping down from the countertop.

“Oh he is only a multi-millionaire” Alice practically shouted. “He doesn’t just run the label Bella, he owns it! He is like one of the youngest millionaires.” She had grabbed my arms and was shaking me with her excitement.

“He’s a what...huh?” I was shocked.

“Holy shit Bella! You landed yourself a sugar daddy!” Rose giggled and smacked my back.

“I did not!” I was insulted.

“Oh he’s not technically old enough to be considered a sugar daddy I guess” Alice shrugged.

“How old is he?” I spit out. He hadn’t looked or seemed that much older.

“I would say that he is in his late twenties, probably like twenty six or something” she shrugged.

“So he is around six years older than me?” I sat on the edge of the tub just trying to absorb everything.

Knock...Knock...Knock...

“Yeah?!” Rose shouted out.

“Can I come in?” Sue shouted through the door.

“Of course” Alice yelled back.

The door opened and we didn’t hear or see Sue. “In the bathroom Sue” Rose yelled. Sue appeared in the doorway with a large white box. “What is that?” Rose asked as she took it from Sue’s arms.

“It came for Bella a few minutes ago” Sue turned to look at me. “I don’t know who delivers things this late at night or what kind of person sends things to someone this late either.”

“Oh My God” Rose spoke loudly. Alice and I rushed to Rose’s side. No one could speak.

In a large white box lay at least a dozen deep purple single stem orchids with at least a dozen deep blue peonies. The arrangement was huge and gorgeous; however, the scent that was

penetrating all of our noses was exquisite. There was a cream colored note with gold-leaf trim.

Isabella

It was a pleasure to 'bump' into you this evening.

Please join me for dinner tomorrow evening.

Demitri

He had also included a business card with his business number and a hand written number on the back.

“OH MY GOD! BELLA!!” Alice started jumping up and down; she was holding onto my arm so I was shaking with each jump.

“Well, I guess its tall, dark, rich, romantic and fuck me” Rose smirked.

“Rosalie” Sue shouted. “Watch your language” she scolded though we all could see a smile at the corner of her mouth. Then she turned to me “Bella, who is this man?”

Alice went into overdrive and told Sue everything. “Well...” Sue finally spoke when Al was done “I think that it’s late and we all need some sleep.” She smiled, hugged me, and left the room.

Alice ran out of the room after Sue left. Rose sat down on her bed. “So, are you going to call him?”

“I’m not sure. I mean I just met him.” My head felt like it was underwater.

“How are you going to get to know him if you don’t call him?” Rose lay down on her side with her head in her hand.

“Good point” I lay back onto my bed staring at the ceiling.

Alice appeared back in the room with a vase half filled with water. She put the flowers in the water and set them up on my desk. “Jesus, where do you get flowers this late at night, let alone these kinds of flowers?” Al lay down next to me on my bed. “I’m beyond jealous” she wrapped an arm around my waist as she lay face down.

It didn’t take long for all of us to drift off to sleep.

The morning arrived quicker than I would have liked, but when you sleep next to Alice and she gets up then you get up too. After breakfast Alice was on me instantly about calling Demitri.

“Alice it’s only eleven in the morning” I took another bite of cereal from my bowl. “I’m sure he

is at breakfast or something.”

“Bella you are going to wait too long and then you are going to miss out” she huffed. “When you do call him I want to know about it and I will help you get dressed.” I nodded. Alice’s phone rang. “Hello” “Mhmmm..” “Okay, I’m coming” She closed her phone. “Okay mom wants me, so I have to go” I lifted my hand as a wave goodbye. “Don’t forget to find out where you are going tonight!” She shouted as I heard the front door clothes.

I was washing out my cereal bowl when I heard the phone ring. Two minutes later Sue yelled for me. “In the kitchen” I turned around as she walked in with the cordless.

“You have a phone call” she smiled at me.

“Who is it?” I whispered and covered the mouthpiece.

“Demitri” she whispered back and quickly left the room.

I cleared my throat and took a deep breath. “H-hello?”

“Bella, how are you this morning? Did you sleep well?”

“Umm..yeah” I barely got it out of my mouth. He was a little persistent and I was slightly nervous.

“You received my thank you?”

“Oh god. I am such a jerk. Yes I got them last night. Thank you!” I felt like an asshole. I didn’t even think to thank him for the beautiful flowers.

“So then you got my invitation to dinner?”

“Uh, yes. I uh..”

“You aren’t interested then?”

“Um, no. I mean that’s not it...” I slapped my hand to my forehead. How did he make me such a nervous wreck?

“Bella?”

“Yeah” I mumbled with my head against the wall.

“Would you accompany me for dinner tonight?”

“Yes”

“Great. I will have the car there to pick you up...”

“Wait, what car?” I stood up straight and confused.

“My car. I will have it come by around seven to pick you up at your parent’s house, I have a meeting that I have to be in or I would come pick you up myself. Do you have a preference on the restaurant?”

“You don’t have to send a car. I can just meet you.” He cut me off.

“No no, I will have the car pick you up around seven. Do you know the Italian restaurant in Port Angeles?”

“Yes I do.”

“How about we head there for dinner then?”

“Okay, sounds great.”

“I’ll see you at seven. Until then.”

“Bye” I hung up and ran upstairs.

I grabbed my cell phone and called Alice with all the details.

“Come over now. I’ll meet you in my room!” Before we hung up I was already heading out to the tree house path.

Alice decided we needed to go shopping and no arguing that I did could stop the trip once Rose was on board too.

After four hours of shopping we got back to our houses. I climbed into my bed to take a quick nap before my date.

It couldn’t have possibly been more than an hour and Alice was shaking me viciously to wake me up. “Come on lazy ass! Get up! It’s beautification time!” I pulled myself out of bed and let Al drag me over to her room. I allowed her to attack me with straightening irons, eyelash curlers, tweezers, and even high heels. I was finished and was about to head out toward my house to wait for the car when there was a knock on Al’s door.

“Come in” she yelled as I hugged her.

“Hey Al we are going out for dinner and want...” Edward stopped and looked at me. I smiled lightly and turned my eyes quickly.

“Thanks Alice” I said as I left for the balcony.

“I want details tonight Swan; especially the hot and steamy details!” She yelled as I crossed the tree house path. I laughed at her.

It was seven on the dot when the doorbell rang; impressive. I answered the door and there was Dimitri. I smiled and then bit my lip.

“I thought that...”

“I couldn’t stand the thought of not being the one to see you first” He smiled and offered me his arm. I took it and he led me to his car. The driver opened the door and we climbed in the back seat.

EPOV

The minute I saw her with my mother I felt sick. There she was after all this time. I felt like an asshole for ignoring her for so long, but I just couldn’t take being kept at arm’s length any longer with her. She seemed to want me, but then she always kept me from being completely with her.

Glendaly was beautiful and sweet and open. She never held me at arm’s length and she was very receptive about how I felt and she let me know how she felt. There were no games. After a couple of months I knew that I loved her; she was fantastic and things had been going better than I could’ve imagined with anyone.

Then there she was. I knew she would be here; our families were so close. I didn’t expect to feel so awful when I saw her though. What I did expect was for her to be cold and distant. Instead she was friendly and very warm; even if we only spoke briefly and was hardly in each other’s company. I had noticed that she seemed to have become Dimitri’s company for the remainder of the party.

Now when I walked into Alice’s room and saw her in that blue dress and her hair half pulled up exposing her full face I was stunned. *Had I forgotten how beautiful she was and how one look into her eyes could melt my soul? I guess I had.* She turned quickly from me and left the room. Then Al yelled to her about wanting details.

“Details?” I raised an eyebrow as I stood behind Alice; who was looking out the doors to her balcony.

“Yep. She’s going out tonight with...” she stopped suddenly and turned to me. “What did you want?” she raised her eyebrows at me.

“Oh, we are going out for dinner and wanted to know if Jasper and you wanted to join us” I shrugged and fought myself to not look out across the balcony after Bella. *She had a date tonight.*

“Where?”

“Port Angeles” I said vaguely.

“What restaurant asshole?” She tilted her head to one side and rolled her eyes at me.

“I was thinking Italian” I watched her face shift into panic. “What the hell is wrong with you?”

“Nothing, how about we do Mexican instead? I really want..”

“Sorry Al, Glenda picked Italian” Something was up with my baby sister, but I couldn’t figure out what.

“Umm...okay” she held her finger up for me to wait. She ran off to her bathroom and then grabbed my arm and we headed downstairs.

After getting everyone rounded up we headed outside to the cars. While I was helping Glenda into the car I noticed Alice huddled with Rosalie and Jasper. I crept up behind them.

“So what do we do?” Rose asked in a hushed tone.

“Do about what?!” All three of them jumped and turned to me in surprise.

Alice hit my arm. “That shit isn’t funny!!” She stomped off and climbed into a car with Jasper. I chuckled at her behavior.

We got to the restaurant and we were told that they were booked. I tried to work my smile; however, it was a no go. I looked over the hostesses shoulder and saw that there were empty tables.

“What are all those tables then?” I was getting a little irritated.

“I’m sorry sir the restaurant has been ‘rented out’ for the night.” She gave a fake smile and then looked back down to a book that was in her hands. I was turning around to leave when Alice stepped forward.

“You mean that someone paid for the entire restaurant for the whole night?” Al’s face was part excitement and part awe. The hostess rolled her eyes and nodded, then went back to her book. Alice looked to Rose and they congregated into a huddle of whispers and giggles.

Everyone climbed back into their cars to head to another restaurant. That was when a black car pulled up to the Italian restaurant and parked. I smirked because they were about to be turned away as well.

“Should we tell them about the restaurant?” Glenda asked me while she laced her fingers with mine.

“Nah they will find out” I turned the key in the ignition.

“But you know him don’t you?” I looked up and sure enough I did. It was Demitri. I sighed and nodded to Glenda.

I stood halfway out of my open car door. “Hey D!” He turned to me quickly.

“Edward?”

“Hey man” I pointed to the restaurant. “Their tables are taken for the night.”

He smiled. “I know. I took them.”

Then he leaned down and helped a woman out of the car; Bella. Demitri waved and smiled quickly before wrapping an arm around her waist and leading her into the restaurant.

Demitri was with Bella.

A/N: Yes you aren’t going to like me for awhile...but I promise...it’s all about the storyline that I have planned out. Give it time, be patient, and try to enjoy the story itself. PLEASE!!!!

Also, be prepared for LEMONS...however, they will be with uncannon pairings. Don’t scream at me too much.

#####

Chapter: 21

Chapter 21 – Italiano

“You reserved the entire restaurant?” I asked in disbelief and a little flattery.

“Of course” he smiled widely. “This way we had privacy.”

“Oh” was the best I could come up at first; then my mind caught up. “Demitri you do realize that you don’t have to do all this?” I leaned close to him and said low. *Like I need to whisper in and empty restaurant. I’m a fucking idiot!* I wanted to slap myself in the forehead.

“Bella, I have to impress you don’t I?” he winked.

“Demitri you don’t have to do this kind of thing to impress me or have to ‘impress’ me at all. I

like you and I had a good time with you last night” I looked down into my lap hoping that he understood that I wasn’t trying to be unappreciative.

His fingers were quickly under my chin lifting my face to his. “Please don’t hide your face from me” he gazed into my eyes. “I like to look at your beautiful face and I love that you say what’s on your mind.” His Italian accent was almost enough to make me slide under the table to kneel in front of him. *Whew, it’s been awhile.* I almost fanned myself with the menu.

“I really appreciate everything that you’ve done, so please don’t think that...” he placed his finger over my lips.

“You haven’t even seen what I’ve got in store for you tonight dear Bella” he winked as a waiter approached. *Holy mother of swooning! I need water; cold water preferably.* Then he ordered in Italian and I wanted to lick his lips; it was so fucking sexy.

I watched the waiter disappear and then turned my eyes back to Demitri. “What did you just say?” I smiled and bit my lip.

He sighed happily and then leaned very close to my face. “Maybe you should take some Italian while you are in college” he smirked. I was about to tease him back but he cut me off. “Then I can take you on a proper honeymoon in Italy.” I closed my mouth quickly and my eyes widened until he started laughing. “Oh if you would’ve seen your face” he chuckled. *Oh he’s got jokes huh?* I started laughing with him and I felt myself blush a very deep shade of red.

“You’re mean” I scowled at him and then laughed. He simply smiled at me.

The waiter returned to our table with a bottle of wine, a bread basket, and then I heard music. I turned around and saw violinists enter the room as they played softly; it was also the first time I had a chance to get a real good look around the restaurant.

Flowers were everywhere; along with candle light, though the flowers were a mass quantity of the same flowers that he had sent to my home last night. I continued to take everything in; until I heard him lightly chuckle.

I turned back to him “What?”

“Nothing” he smiled at me reaching over and brushing the back of my hand with his fingers.

“So how does someone get flowers and get them delivered so late at night?” I cocked an eyebrow. “You own a flower shop too?” I took a sip from my wine glass.

His smile got even larger than I thought it could. “Oh, I have my sources.”

“Hmm” I nodded. “That sounds kind of shady to me” I winked at him. He laughed.

“Are you ready for dinner sir?” the waiter had appeared out of nowhere.

Demitri looked to me and I nodded. "Yes, we are ready. Thank you" he replied and the waiter disappeared into the kitchen.

We spent dinner eating delicious Italian food, drinking wine, and conversing with each other. I learned more about him; however, he seemed more interested in me, asking me question after question. We talked about our pasts, our families, our current life, and even touched on future plans. I told him that I was hoping to move to New York in the future to really begin my career, after college.

At one point in the evening he asked me to dance with him and we did; slowly. He nuzzled his face into my neck and we swayed silently for awhile.

When the evening was coming to its end he helped me into the car and held me closely; placing kisses on my temple during the drive. Arriving to my parent's home, he walked me to the front door, asked me for my phone number in Seattle, and kissed my hand before speaking "buonanotte mia bella uomo." He smiled at me as I stood at the door watching him walk backward to the awaiting car.

I entered the house and heard my phone; text message. Checking the message I saw it was an unknown number: 'I would love to see you again very soon Mia Bella' Demitri. I smiled and quickly text him that I would let him know when I was back in Seattle. Then there was a knock on the door.

Still smiling from my text message I opened the door. My face fell; Edward.

"Hello" he said in a very low voice.

"Hello" I said quickly.

He rubbed the back of his head "Can we talk?"

"Edward, I just got home and I'm actually tired. Another time okay?" I started to turn away and shut the door.

"Please Bella?" he begged. Anger bubbled over as I thought of the many times I had asked him by text and voicemail to please call me or talk to me.

"You had your chance to talk. Right now I would rather just forget that everything and anything ever happened. Good night Edward." I kept my tone in control and I didn't yell at him the way I wanted to. *Why couldn't he just leave it alone? It was a great night until he just ruined it. Ugh!*

I closed the door; leaving him on the porch and headed upstairs.

I woke up the next morning by myself; at least I thought I was alone. That was until I heard the foot steps. I quickly jumped into a sitting position and looked over my left shoulder.

“What the fuck Edward?!” I climbed out of bed and stood with my arms in the air. “Are you a stalker now?!”

“Shh..calm down before your dad comes in with his gun” he put a finger to his lips. “I just wanted to talk to you before we leave, that’s all.” He sat down on my bed.

“Fine, say what you have to say. I need to get ready” I huffed and sat down at the other end of my bed.

“First, I’m so sorry” he said it with a shaky voice. *Good!* “I really do not have a good excuse for what happened and why I ignored your attempts to talk to me other than to say that I was dumb and I just needed to not deal with it.” He sighed. “I really am sorry how everything....ended.”

“Ended? Oh I think you mean how everything stopped.” I corrected him. After letting out a frustrated growl I took deep breath. “Okay look. Apology accepted; neither of us was innocent in the whole matter; however, we have both moved on. Let’s just call it a truce and not go back to this again. Okay?”

I looked over at Edward who had a weird unreadable look on his face; it disappeared quickly and he nodded.

As I stood he did too. “Thank you Edward” I said politely as I walked over and opened the door to the balcony.

He nodded as he walked toward the door, but stopped in front of me. Before I realized it he had reached his arms around me and hugged me tightly. “I truly am sorry” he whispered in my ear before pulling away and heading out the door.

I closed the door behind him and then stood there frozen. *How could he still have that affect on me? The electric current that generated between us was still there when he touched me. Fuck!* I stomped to the bathroom and jumped into the shower; hoping that it would rinse away the resurfacing of feeling.

Once we got back to Seattle our routines returned to normal with one exception; Demitri. We had dated a few more times since we met; a month ago. He had taken me to dinners, dancing, to a play, launch parties for artist that were on his label, and afternoon lunches. It was almost surreal with him. There seemed to be nothing that he couldn’t get or do. I constantly would start to feel too insignificant for all his attention, but he seemed to sense those moments because he would go more out of his way to compliment me and thank me for spending time with him; like I was the prize. It was very flattering.

The rest of the relationship seemed to come on so quickly that I felt like I needed it to slow down somewhere. So, I had taken things slowly with Demitri on the physical level. We had had some heavy kissing and make-out sessions; however, I usually broke us out of them. He was very understanding, but he was also a man and I knew that I couldn’t keep it at bay for too long.

Besides who would want to keep an extremely hot Italian man on the backburner for too long?

Tonight Demitri wanted to have dinner and a movie. He said that it would be very casual, so I dressed casually. I told him to give me directions to his house (I had not yet been there) and I would drive myself over, but wasn't having that. He wanted to pick me up.

When I opened the door I saw him standing in front of me in black sweater, worn blue jeans, and a smile; all I wanted to do was lick his teeth. "Ciao Bella" he smiled to me. I smiled back and kissed him quickly as he grabbed my hand and led me to his car.

I expected a nice and probably expensive home; however when we pulled up to the large black gate as Demitri punched a code onto a keypad I became intimidated by the thought of what was behind that gate. Pulling up the rounded driveway I looked up to a magnificent home; it was at least three stories high, white, and had large white columns in the front. There was a fountain in the middle of his driveway. Suddenly I felt very out of place.

"Come on beautiful" he reached and took my hand as I got out of the car and he led me into his home.

I was awe struck once we entered; it was unbelievably large and everything looked untouched and expensive. It was almost like a museum. I pulled myself tighter to his side.

"It's a bit much, I know" he laughed. "But it's just home to me." He led us through the large entry way through a larger room full of couches and chairs, then through a set of large wooden doors. On the other side of the doors was a very warm living room and kitchen; like a large great room. The furniture and decorating in these rooms was much warmer and looked comfortable; I relaxed a little.

There was a clanging noise in the direction of the kitchen and I looked over. Standing there was an older woman with a white uniform; she smiled warmly at me and continued in the kitchen. Before I could get the question out of my mouth Demitri answered. "That is Mrs. Jenks; she runs the house."

"Runs the house?" I raised an eyebrow. He laughed at my expression.

"Well, I am not married and someone had to keep the place in order; since I work quite often" he shrugged.

"So, you expect your 'wife' to take care of 'running your house'?" I had both eyebrows raised now.

"Only if she chose too, but I would prefer the woman that I love to take care of 'our' home and to give me an incentive to get out of work and come home" he smiled at me and pulled me in closely putting one hell of a kiss on my lips.

"Ahem" I looked up to see a man in a black uniform standing behind me at the doors we entered

through.

“Yes Jay?” Demitri directed to the gray haired gentleman.

“Dinner is ready when you are sir” he replied very formally.

“Thank you” he smiled to Jay and then turned to me. “Hungry?”

“Starving” I smiled.

“Good” with our fingers still laced he led me to a large dining table where there looked to be five different main dishes along with other side foods.

“Is this just for us?” I knew my eyes were very large taking in all the food.

“Of course” he shrugged and pulled a chair out for me.

“And what happens to what doesn’t get eaten?” I was concerned about the waste; it was how I was raised.

“Oh, I’m...I’m not sure. I don’t usually have dinner like this, it would be a first” he smiled at me nervously as he sat across from me. *I wasn’t a big fan of the formal sitting, but I went with it. It was his house.*

“Oh” I responded.

“I’m sure I can figure something out for it. I have plenty of help around this house, I’ll have Mrs. Jenks package it up in the fridge and let the staff have at it for lunch tomorrow.” I smiled at his answer and his nervousness disappeared.

After dinner I helped Mrs. Jenks clean up and put the food away. Demitri laughed at my insistence, but he helped too. Once it was all cleaned up and put away we left the kitchen hand in hand.

“Movie?” I nodded and smiled. *I couldn’t stop smiling with him.*

When he led us out of the living room that I assumed we were watching the movie I thought maybe we were going out. “I should get my purse if we are going out to...”

He laughed. “We aren’t going out; we are watching the movie here.” He kept leading the way.

“oh” I said quietly with my brow furrowed in confusion.

Then we walked through a new set of double doors and I gasped. “HOLY SHIT! You have a movie theater!” It wasn’t a question, cause I could clearly see it was a personal movie theater; it was an exclamation and borderline freak out.

I heard him full belly laugh at my reaction. “Yes” was all he could get out.

I turned and scowled at him “Are you laughing at me?” I raised my eyebrow.

“No Mia Bella” I crossed my arms; not believing him. “I’m laughing at your reaction” he laughed again slightly. “Your reactions are always so genuine, it’s refreshing.” He placed his hands on my hips and pulled me close to him.

His smiling lips pressed to my mouth and he mumbled “mia bella Isabella”. That set me on fire and my arms went around his shoulders pulling us closer as his hands slid around to my lower back. I slid my tongue over his lower lip and he quickly opened his mouth allowing our tongues to twist and glide along with each other.

My right hand slid up behind his head as I tried to deepen our kiss further and when his hands slid over my ass I pressed my body firmly into his. I could feel his erection and I knew that a pulse was surging around my clit. He grasped the back of my thighs and lifted me; I instantly wrapped my legs around his waist and he staggered us over to one of the large couches in the room and sat down with me straddling his lap.

“So no movie?” he mumbled against my lips.

I smiled slyly and shook my head as I pulled his shirt over his head and tossed it to another of the couches. He groaned as I pressed my hips forward; pressing his hard cock into my hot center. His hands clasped my hips and my mouth crashed back to his while I outlined his defined chest with my fingers. I moaned as he bucked his hips upward into me.

Demitri’s hands quickly grasped and pulled my shirt over my head and I unclasped my bra letting it slid off my arms to the couch. His warm hands moved slowly up my stomach until each breast rested in his palms. I felt his breathing hitch and I pressed my hips forward again; earning another groan from him.

He flipped me over onto my back and quickly had my pants unbuttoned and sliding down my legs; with my panties included in the material. He took one hands and laid it on the top of my foot before slowly running his flat hand up my leg, my side, he grazed the side of my breast and then cupped his hand around my neck as he pressed his lips firmly to mine.

I undid his jeans and pushed them from his body with my toes. I felt his hard warm erection spring free from the confinement of his clothing. The pulse between my legs quickened.

His mouth moved over my chin and down my neck until he took my nipple into his mouth. I moaned and writhed under him as he caressed my nipple with his tongue and grazed his teeth across. I bucked my hips forward and made quick contact with his cock; both of us moaning at the contact.

I felt Demitri fumble around beside us for a moment and when I heard the foil wrapper I realized

what he was doing. I reached out and grasped the condom from him; he looked surprised and confused. I pushed him back into his original position on the couch and I crawled over and slid between his legs. I placed the condom in my mouth and then placed his erection in my mouth; putting the condom on him with my lips and teeth. He hissed at the feel and the sight of my actions. I bobbed my head a couple of times before crawling back up his body.

His hands roamed my body and he left wet kisses all over my collarbone and neck. I positioned myself over him and slid onto him slowly. His arms quickly wrapped around me tightly holding me into place.

Demitri growled into my ear “Non ho mai sentito che qualcosa perfezioni così!” I didn’t know what he had said, but I knew that when he spoke in Italian to me it turned me on even more. I couldn’t sit still any longer; I started to rock back and forth and he allowed me. “Oh God Bella!”

“hummmn” I moaned as I started to pump myself up and down on him. “Oh..Ungh...fuck” it felt amazing; he felt amazing.

I leaned back putting my hands on his knees while I slid up and down his hard cock; he bucked his hips up to meet me and I moaned with each grind. Our movements became more frantic as we both approached our threshold.

He brought his right hand up to my breast and rolled my hard sensitive nipple in his fingers; I moaned. The fingers of his left hand became occupied with my swollen and sensitive clit. “Voglio sentire che lei viene per me” he spoke seductively and that was it for me, the Italian shoved me over the edge hard and I bounced on him forcefully as I rode out my orgasm.

The tightening of his hands on hips let me know that he was thrusting into his release; which came quickly as he called out “Mia Bella!”

I collapsed against his chest; his dick still buried inside me. We were both panting and trying to calm down.

Demitri moved the hair off my shoulder his head was against and started to plant light kisses. I leaned back slowly and his hands cupped my face; he kissed me fiercely. When he pulled back he looked directly into my eyes. “Dal momento l'ho incontrato ho saputa che cadrei per lei” he spoke breathlessly and in almost a whisper as he brought his lips back to mine.

We eventually moved from our position on the couch. Demitri slipped his boxers and jeans back on. I grabbed my clothes and slid those on as well. Cuddling on the couch we finally settled into a movie

Apparently I fell asleep, because I woke to the feeling of two arms cradling me behind my back and my knees. I yawned “What time is it?”

I felt him kiss my head. “It’s late, just sleep.” He laid me down on a bed and I stretched while looking around the room.

“Is this your room?” I said in a hushed voice.

He laughed. “Yes” he replied. I stood up. “Where do you think you are going?” He wrapped his arms around my waist.

“Bathroom?”

He pointed to a half opened door across from me and I headed in that direction.

I used the bathroom and washed my face. I didn’t have a toothbrush so I just used some toothpaste on my finger. I figure that was better than nothing at all. As I turned to go back out I saw a button up shirt hanging on the back of the bathroom door, so I stripped off my clothes and wrapped up in his shirt before heading back to bed.

Entering the room quietly I didn’t see Demitri anywhere, so I walked toward the bed. I was slightly startled when I felt him grab me around the waist and then spin me around.

“What do you have on?” I could barely see his raised eyebrow in the almost non-existent light.

“Umm..your shirt” I bit my lip and looked down. “I hope that you don’t...” His lips cut me off.

“Mia Bella” he shook his head and then moved back to look me over. “Sei Meraviglioso” he heavily breathed out and then captured my lips again walking us back to the bed.

Once we hit the bed the shirt was irrelevant.

A/N: Okay a little Italian hottie and naughty for Bella! YOU GO BELLA!!!!!! I hope that you like Demitri, cause he will be around for awhile....but not too too long. :o)

4eva - I’m sorry that I stopped like that on chapter 20, but I have to give you a reason to come back and read! LOL

Screams-At-Midnight – Just trust...trust. LOL It will get back on track, but we are going to have some time between them. However...Edward’s wedding is coming up soon! (Insert evil laugh here).

Sarkule – I’m sorry to make Edward an ass, but even Edward has his ass moments. It will all come back around in the end...just trust me and have patience with me.

Just me – I am not sure who you are; however, you review my work frequently and I wanted to thank you. I also love love your detailed reviews. Thank you!

Everyone...give me some trust and some patience! I am going to get everything moving quickly after having them both established with their ‘new’ significant others. Sorry to those who will hate it, but there will be an Edward/Glenda lemon in the future. I will warn

you and you can skip it if you like. LOL

Wurstyy – Thank you for the love!

And now...Some Italian translation – if you need it

Buonanotte mia bella uomo = Good night my beautiful

Mia Bella = my Bella

Mia bella = my beautiful

Mia bella Bella = my beautiful Bella

Non ho mai sentito che qualcosa perfezioni così = I have never felt something so perfect

Voglio sentire che lei viene per me = I want to feel you come for me

Dal momento l'ho incontrato ho saputa che cadrei per lei. = From the moment I met you I knew that I would fall for you.

Sei Meraviglioso = you are stunning

#####

Chapter: 22

Chapter 22 – Newlyweds

A/N: Don't get mad at me, but I have finalized my story line and it will be a little different than I had originally planned; though I won't be dragging it out over hundreds of chapters...I promise.

Be patient and trust in me! Demitri and Glenda will be around for a longer time period in the story than originally planned; though as I said, I won't drag it out over tons of chapters and will be focusing more on the Bella/Edward interactions. Yes...it's a Bella/Edward story. Give me time. :o)

EPOV

We had sat in the Mexican restaurant for a couple of hours and I could hear the buzz of conversation around me, but my mind wouldn't leave Bella. She was seeing Demitri? When had

they met? How long had they been dating? The questions kept coming and the scene of tonight wouldn't leave my mind. It truly bothered me.

"Edward!" I was pulled out of my thoughts to see a perplexed look on Glendaly's face. "You have been awfully quiet tonight?" She placed a hand on my arm and rubbed it.

I forced a smile. "Just more tired than I thought, I guess." I shrugged and took a large gulp of my beer. She smiled sweetly at me before turning back to a conversation with Alice.

Why am I thinking about her when I have my gorgeous fiancé sitting next to me? It shouldn't bother me that she has moved on to someone else. I mean, I've done that same thing, right? Then why does it bother me?

Dinner had finished up and I still couldn't get them out of my head. I could tell that Glenda felt something was off and I didn't want to let on to my thoughts so I knew I had to get this shit out of my head.

We arrived back to my parent's house and I excused Glenda and myself to bed for the evening. Glenda looked a little confused, but I cleared up that confusion once I shut the bedroom door and pressed her against the wall.

My lips pressed onto her full mouth and she accepted my tongue eagerly as I slid it between her lips. Once we broke for air I moved my lips down her neck; however, Glendaly whispered breathily into my ear. "Edward, your parents..." I cut her off.

"We will be quiet" I attacked her mouth again and moved her toward the bed. I pushed her down quickly and slid my hands up her thighs until I could feel the lace of her panties. I hurriedly pulled them off of her and threw them across the room.

As I moved up her body I pushed the fabric of her dress up until it was bunched at her chest. Pulling her up to me, I slipped the dress off and thanked god that she hadn't wore a bra tonight; I wanted as little clothing as possible to remove. I wanted to feel her around me; for her body and scent to erase my thoughts of Bella.

I yanked my shirt over my head and quickly tossed it to join her panties. She moved fast with the button on my pants and pushed them down with her feet.

There was no clothing between us and we were both panting heavily in anticipation and pleasure. I cupped her left breast with my hand while I took the other nipple into my mouth; causing her to arch her back and moan out my name.

Is this what Demitri would be doing to Bella tonight? As soon as the thought entered my mind I shook it off and positioned myself at Glenda's entrance; letting the tip only slip between her folds. She was very wet and ready.

She moaned my name and begged for me as she pushed her hips toward me. I responded with a

hard thrust into her; her groaning out in pleasure underneath me and my movements. I moved quickly in and out of her wet center eliciting moans and grunts from both of us.

Would Bella go to his room tonight? Again I shook off the thought and worked Glenda over forcefully and intently. I felt her muscles start to tense up and she called out as her core clenched around me tightly. A few more thrusts after her orgasm sent me over the edge of my own. I moaned and collapsed on top of her. We fell asleep shortly after.

We had only been back in Seattle for a week when Glenda got called off to New York for a photo shoot. I had a meeting with Demitri in regards to a new artist that I was working with and he wanted to sign to his label. I thought about taking the opportunity to discuss his relationship with Bella; however, the meeting was pushed back and I rethought about asking him. In the end I didn't; it wasn't my place.

I spent most of my time working on my production company; trying to get it really launched. The new artist that I was working with was definitely my step in that direction. If Demitri did decide to sign her then it would definitely be the boost my company needed.

Glenda got back from New York only to leave again for Paris; most of the wedding was being planned by Alice with Glenda over the phone. They had attempted to get my help, but I really needed to focus all my attention to the production company.

I had seen Bella and Demitri at a couple of parties and dinners together; though I kept my distance from them. It was too close to the wedding for me to start those thoughts again.

Months had passed and the wedding was only two weeks away. The family was coming in a week to Seattle to stay for an entire week while we had the rehearsal dinner, finished the final details, and then the wedding. Most of our invitations had attending responses so it would be a full wedding and reception.

I was still working on signing Tanya with Demitri's record label. I knew he was interested; however he was either trying not to seem too interested or he had been extremely distracted by something else. I didn't try to think about what he was distracted with; I knew I didn't want the answer.

There was tension before the wedding between Glenda and me. She was upset with my schedule and lack of participation in planning the wedding. I tried to be as loving and understanding of the stress she was under; however, I also tried to get her to understand the pressure I was under with the company.

The wedding arrived quickly and before I knew it I was standing in front of a mirror with my father fixing my tie, while my mother wiped tears from her eyes as she watched us. The photographer was getting on my nerves.

I stood at the altar with Emmett at my side waiting for Glenda to come down the aisle. When the music started and I saw Alice walk out toward the altar I smiled. Then I caught sight of her long

brown hair; curled and half pulled up. My body twitched to go to her, but then I saw an arm pull her closer. The arm belonged to Dimitri. She laid her head back on his chest as they watched Alice; Bella had a large smile on her face. He leaned down and whispered something in her ear and she blushed then bit her lip. *Fuck! The lip biting.* I groaned internally; then I shook off the feelings that she could rise from me without even trying.

The wedding march began and I quickly moved my eyes to the doors; which opened and there stood Glendaly in a large white dress; she looked amazing as she always did. Her father walked her toward me and I smiled largely as he gave me her hand.

The ceremony was perfect and we were announced as Mr. and Mrs. Cullen. Everyone stood as we left the church and got into the greeting line. Our guests filed out one by one, close to each other. I was internally agonizing about one couple.

Once they appeared in front of Glenda and me I wrapped my arm around her waist for strength to not do something crazy.

“Congratulations” Bella spoke first as she hugged Glenda.

“Thank you so much for coming” Glenda smiled brightly back to Bella.

“Look at you” she smiled at me widely. “Congratulations” she hugged me quickly and I instantly missed her touch when she moved away.

I was about to pull her back into another hug but Dimitri’s hand found Bella’s and he pulled her to his side. “Congratulations Cullen” he shook my hand. “You actually found a woman who would marry you huh?” he winked me and laughed.

“Yeah well perhaps someday you will get as lucky” I shot back out and instantly regretted saying it.

“Oh I have” he smiled large and lifted Bella’s left hand. “I am the luckiest man ever” he beamed as he kissed the large diamond ring that sat was on her hand; Bella blushed.

“Oh my goodness” Glenda squealed. “When did you two get engaged?”

“About a two weeks ago” Bella said lightly and bit her lip as she looked up to Dimitri’s face.

“I am so happy for you” Glenda squeezed past me and hugged Bella tightly; Bella returned the hug smiling.

“Um..congratulations, I didn’t know” I tried to keep a calm tone and attempted to sound happy for them; I don’t think that I was successful by the look I saw on Bella’s face.

“No one really knows yet, but it will be known soon enough” Dimitri smiled. *He didn’t seem to stop smiling; fucker!* “Now I just have to get her to set the date” he kissed her temple and I

tightened my hold on Glenda, who looked at me happily yet a little confused.

As they walked away I watched and regretted it; Demitri's hand was so low on her back that it was almost inappropriate. We finished with the last guest and headed back into the church for pictures. Once we were done at the church we drove around town to different spots that were familiar and sentimental to us for photos. This actually helped me to focus on the happy day and not on my past.

The reception was amazingly decorated and was a ton of fun. The wedding cake was cut; without any face smashing as Glenda requested. The toasts were funny and sincere. The dancing was fun and exciting; everyone seemed to be on the dance floor at all times. The bar was pumping out drink after drink; everyone seemed to be having a really good time. After the reception we jumped into our limo and headed for the airport; time for the honeymoon.

Two months after our return from our two week honeymoon our lives had gotten back to normal. I worked a lot and Glenda traveled a lot. I had been missing her since she left me two weeks ago and couldn't wait for her to arrive home tonight from New York. She had at least two weeks of no traveling, no photo shoots, no runways, etc. It would be nice to see each other every night for a change; rather than talking over the phone.

Glenda had been home for almost two days and we had spent each night completely naked and not leaving our bed. I would have to leave in the morning for work, but made sure to get home early enough for dinner. I was really trying to be around more for her; and I could tell she appreciated it.

Almost a week after Glenda got home Demitri called to set up an appointment with me and with Tanya; I knew this was it, he was going to sign her to his label and I would get to produce her first CD. Glenda and I had celebrated with dinner and an all night bed session.

The meeting went just as I said it would and both Tanya and I left excited. Tanya wanted to celebrate so we went out to dinner with some people from the production company. It was a company celebration.

I got home about one in the morning and Glenda was on the couch waiting for me.

"Hey...you're still up?" I was surprised to see her.

"I'm still up?" she stood with her hands on her hips. "Is that all you have to say to me Edward?" her voice was raised.

I stuttered a few times and even got defensive with her attitude.

"Jesus Christ Edward I have been sitting here worrying about where you were! Didn't it even cross your mind to call me?!"

"Look I was out celebrating with some people from the company about the great news with

Demitri. Yes, I should have called, but I'm just not used to having to call you at night if I go out. You usually aren't here." I shot back. I knew it wasn't completely fair, but I was in defensive mode.

"Screw you Edward!" she shouted as she stomped off upstairs and slammed the bedroom door. I figured that the couch was my bed tonight.

We talked the next day and everything was calmed over and made better.

Another week had gone by and we were sitting together on the couch drinking wine, eating pizza, and watching a movie. In the movie a couple was having an unplanned baby and it got me to thinking about kids.

"Can I ask you something?" Glenda was sitting between my legs with her back pressed against me. I wrapped my arms around her and pulled her closer so that my chin was resting on her shoulder.

"What?" I could hear the smile in her reply.

"Want to have a baby?" I asked in full seriousness.

She started laughing and turned around to look at me; she stopped laughing suddenly. "You're serious?"

I nodded "Yeah, I mean why shouldn't we?"

"Why?" I shrugged. "Maybe because my job revolves around my appearance and being pregnant is not necessarily the look my contacts are going for, or maybe because we haven't even been married for a year yet. Why rush it?"

"Do you ever want to have kids?" I felt slightly defeated.

"Of course, but in a few years, okay?" she sighed and kissed my forehead. "Look we are only twenty three years old Edward. We have time." She curled back into my chest and turned back to the movie.

I sighed and turned my eyes back to the movie, but I couldn't believe how quickly she shot down the idea of having a kid. I had to be honest; I was disappointed, but I understood.

Glenda was on call, but was still home. This would be three weeks straight; which was like a record. However, my schedule was now full. I was working till after eleven at night trying to get everything done on time for Tanya's release, as well as the new artists that we had attracted as well. My plate was full and my home life started to suffer from my neglect.

It was two weeks of late nights and at least three large arguments later that I walked in the door one night after midnight. The house was dark. Knowing that Glenda was most likely in bed by

now I headed to the kitchen and flipped on the light.

It was in the fluorescent glow of the kitchen light that the large invitation on the refrigerator caught my attention. I got closer to read the silver writing on the fancy and clearly expensive paper.

You are cordially invited to attend the union of Isabella Marie Swan to Demetrius Angelo Fiorello. I felt my stomach flip and I had to lean over the sink, because I swore that I was going to throw up. I stumbled back a bit when I pulled away from the sink. *Bella was marrying Demetri. Demetri was marrying my Bella. Whoa wait...my Bella? She hasn't been mine for a very long time. I have Glenda and I don't need anyone else.* I spent most of my next two waking hours trying to convince myself that I was fine with this; her wedding, my marriage, my life.

A month later Glenda reminded me that we had the wedding attend this upcoming weekend. I had spoken to Alice and my mother, who had been very active in the wedding planning with Bella. They said nothing but happy things to say about Bella, her wedding, and Demetri; apparently Bella was happy and excited to be getting married.

Their wedding was in a traditional catholic church; which was for Demetri's Italian background and their reception was being held at the highly expensive Pravda space. It could fit the large amount guests that I was sure would be attending, given Demetri's family, lifestyle and his career.

We were seated by dark haired men that were clearly related to Demetri. After being seated on the bride's side of the church I noticed that my parents were sitting in the family row with Sue, Sam, and Seth.

The music began and everyone turned in their seats. The first three women to walk down the aisle were unfamiliar to me; they must've been friends of Bella's or relatives of Demetri; next Angela, then Rose, and finally Alice. Once Alice was at the front the wedding march began and everyone stood. Leah walked out with a tiny little girl who was obviously her daughter Marie.

Then there was Bella; hair flowing in large bouncy and shiny curls over her bare shoulders as she held onto Charlie's arm tightly. Her face was a combination of happiness and nervousness. I watched her lock eyes with Demetri and I had to turn my head. I couldn't take it; I sat down.

"Are you okay?" Glenda whispered as she bent down toward my ear.

I nodded. "Just got light headed. I haven't eaten today." She shook her head and stood back up looking toward the altar.

After everyone was seated the ceremony began.

BPOV

Things around Rose, Alice, and me seemed to be flying by so quickly. Rose had moved out and

in with Emmett. Since Emmett joined the Seattle Seahawks and was constantly traveling he had wanted Rose to move into his home so when he was home they were together.

Jasper had moved into the house we had been living in, though they were looking for their own house. Alice had been extremely busy helping Glenda with plans for her and Edward's wedding. The knot was still there when I thought about it, but I had learned to ignore it pretty well.

Demitri had been trying to convince me to move in with him for over a month once he had found out that Alice and Jasper were planning to move which I kept declining. I knew that it was frustrating him that I would move in with him, but I just felt so out of place in his house; like I didn't belong there.

One night about five months ago he had decided to take me out for completing my first year of college. Alice got me all dressed up as only she could and I was picked up by Demitri in a limo. We climbed in and then drove for about thirty minutes until we pulled out onto a runway. Demitri helped me out of the car.

"What are you up to?" then the plane's engines started up.

"Oh nothing" Demitri smirked as he led me to the plane.

"We are not going on the..." he cut me off.

"Oh yes we are" he motioned for me to walk onto the plane first.

It was a little over a two hour flight and we landed in Los Angeles. We climbed into another car and headed to an Italian restaurant.

As we climbed out I teased Demitri "You didn't rent the whole place out did you?" I laughed, but Demitri said nothing. "Did you?!" I screeched.

"Calm down" he soothed as he wrapped his arm around my waist and led me into the restaurant.

It was beautifully decorated to look exactly like a tiny restaurant in an Italian Villa. However, Demetri led me through another set of doors where a table waited for us under the stars and tiny candle lights that lined the wooden arches of a beautiful patio. There were so many flowers and candles that I lost my breath for a moment.

The food was amazing and the dessert was even better.

At the end of the night a small band arrived and played as he twirled me around the patio.

"So all this just to celebrate my first run of classes?" I raised my eyebrow suspiciously.

"Well..." he paused. "Maybe there is one more thing."

I was about to speak, but he went down to one knee in front of me with his hands on my hips.

“Il mio bello, lei è l'amore della mia esistenza. Lo fa per favore il mio onore ed il privilegio per la chiamare mia moglie? Sposarmi bello. L'amo ora e sempre.” His right hand brought up a large diamond ring; probably the largest that I had ever seen in my life. I know my jaw dropped.

I knew what he was doing, but I didn't know Italian. His smile was so sincere, his love was so open to me, and I truly did love and care for him deeply. I knew it wasn't what I had felt with Edward, but this had to be as close as I would ever get.

“Yes” I barely got out. I had to get it out before I changed my answer.

“Yes?” Demitri shouted. I nodded. And he lifted me up high in the air and spun me.

“Mia bella Bella” he yelled. “She said yes!”

I laughed freely.

We drank even more wine on the way back to Seattle and once we got to Demitri's house.

When I woke in the morning Demitri wasn't next to me like he usually was. I started to get up but then I heard the door open.

“Don't you dare get up” he scolded me. “I am pampering my wife to be to breakfast in bed.” He smiled brightly at me.

From that moment everything seemed to be on fast forward again. Edward's wedding had come and gone; where Demitri had started announcing our engagement. I had moved into Demitri's house. Alice and Jasper had found a new house.

It was a month before the wedding and I got a phone call from Rose who was in hysterics. “Oh my god Bella...what will he say? What am I going to do? I didn't want to be...I mean I never thought about...”

“Whoa Rosalie! Slow down, what the fuck are you talking about?” I put down the computer manual that I was reading and sat up straight on the couch in Demitri's, I mean our, living room; he had gotten highly irritated with how I still refer to everything as his, even though I still think that it is.

“I'm pregnant Bella! A month and a half. I am fucking knocked up!” I had to stifle my laughter.

“And?” I pushed.

“And? What do you mean and?!?! Seriously Bella are you high or something?! I just said that I was pregnant! I never thought twice about having kids. Shit what will Em say? Do you think he will be mad at me?” I rolled my eyes.

“Fuck Rose, you seriously think that ‘he who worships at the goddess of Rose’ will be mad about the fact that; first, he got you pregnant, and second, that you will be carrying *his* child? Please tell me you are joking.” I put my forehead in my palm.

She seemed to calm down and I heard her sigh heavily. “I guess I’m slightly overreacting huh?”

“Maybe just a little” I laughed.

“Oh shut up! You have no idea how freaked out I am right now” I stopped laughing and put on my best friend and best cousin hat. We talked for about two hours about the whole thing, and then she decided to call Emmett who was on the road.

Now I am standing behind large wooden doors waiting for the wedding march; the fucking wedding march. *Holy shit!* I turned to look at Charlie who looked like he was sweating as much as I was.

“You’re sure about this?” He raised an eyebrow. I nudged him with my elbow and he laughed.

“Just don’t let me trip on these damn death traps that Alice put me in” and I wiggled one foot out from under my long floor length dress. He chuckled as I smiled.

“You look beautiful baby” he leaned in and kissed my cheek.

“Damn it Charlie don’t ruin my make-up” I teased him.

The music started and we entered together arm in arm. Charlie handed me over to Demitri, but I could feel the hesitation in Charlie. Demitri’s smile and touch confirmed that I was going to be happy.

The ceremony was long; however, I at least got my part; the vowels. We had written joint vowels that Demitri would say in English and I would recite in Italian.

I took a deep breath and recited the words that we had practiced together and I spoke first.

“Demitrius

Lei è il mio amante ed il mio migliore amico,

Lei è il mio sole e la mia terra, l'amerò, la tiene, e l'onora,

la rispetterò, l'incoraggia, e la conserva, nella salute e nella malattia,

Attraverso il dolore ed il successo,

Per tutti i giorni della mia vita.”

“Isabella

You are my lover and my best friend,

You are my sun and my earth,

I will love you, hold you, and honor you,

I will respect you, encourage you, and cherish you,

In health and sickness,

Through sorrow and success,

For all the days of my life.”

The rings were exchanged and we were introduced as Mr. and Mrs. Fiorello.

As we stood in the reception line I felt the knot in my stomach tighten as Edward approached with Glenda. I plastered on my smile.

Edward shook Dimitri’s hand and then moved on to me. While Dimitri and Glenda were speaking, Edward leaned forward and hugged me tightly and he lingered near my ear.

“You look beautiful as always” he whispered and I could feel his lips barely brush my earlobe. I pushed him back slightly and forced a smile out. He frowned and walked away with Glenda.

Now I would be lying if I had said that my body didn’t instantly react to him; however, who the hell was he to do that on my wedding day. It was disgusting. I realized that I didn’t know Edward anymore; he was no longer the young man that I was once in love with.

At least, that is what I had thought.

A/N: Okay, so there is the newest chapter. I will be covering a large time span in my chapters for probably the next two. Then they will slow back down in their span. However, like I said, I have a lot to cover.

Links to the pictures of the wedding dresses, bella’s ring, the cakes are all on my profile. So check them out if you would like the visual.

I am always open to hear what you think. Just be gently with me...Unless you are Edward, then rough me up!!!! LOL LOL

Italian translation: (The proposal) -

Il mio bello, lei è l'amore della mia esistenza. Lo fa per favore il mio onore ed il privilege per la chiamare mia moglie? Sposarmi bello.

= My beautiful, you are the love of my existence. Please make it my honor and privilege to call you my wife? Marry me beautiful.

#####

Chapter: 23

Chapter 23 – Infidelity

BPOV

We had honeymooned in Europe; spending a week and a half traveling around Italy, a week in Greece, half of a week in Paris, and a week in Germany. It was the most traveling I had ever done. I had never heard of a month long honeymoon, but Demitri was adamant that we travel to new places that I had never been.

Once we returned I had a lot of course work to catch up on; things I couldn't do while overseas. Demitri had convinced me to quit my job so that I could concentrate on school. I was reluctant, but then I figured that I could pick up extra classes in hopes of finishing earlier than planned.

Demitri's work schedule kept him working late, but allowed me time for myself; school, working on computers, reading, etc. It was nice for awhile, but then it got lonely in the large house. He traveled a lot and with school I couldn't go with him; much to his disappointment and frustration.

Once things seemed to slow down and we established more of a routine we started to enjoy time together; he truly worshipped me every day. He was always sending gifts to me; flowers, jewelry, notes, singing messengers, etc. It was cute, but after awhile I had grown tired of all the lavish things. When I would try to approach the subject he would shut it down by saying that he wanted me to think of him when he couldn't be with me. I wanted to argue, but it seemed that I just couldn't get it through to him; so I gave up that battle.

Demitri had recently discussed having children and I told him that I would prefer to wait until after I had completed college and started a career for myself. He disagreed stating that I could finish school and start a career; we could easily afford a nanny. I had scoffed at the idea of someone else raising our children; in fact I was pissed off that he suggested such a thing. He said that it was just an idea and not something that had to be done. Then he went on to say that perhaps we could just stop being 'safe' when we were together and let nature decide if we would conceive. I again stated that I wanted to wait. He ended the conversation with arguing by saying

that he wanted me to stop taking the pill and just let things happen and that it would probably take a few months or longer before anything would happen anyways. I huffed, but he only wrapped me up in his arms and kissed my head.

To be honest, we never fought; ever. I would oppose things and he would either agree or disagree with me. Nothing ever escalated. I'm not saying that I wish we would have a huge fight, but I felt like things were never really resolved; simply approved or disapproved. It grew tiring and frustrating; I mean wasn't this the guy that had told me how he loved that I spoke what was on my mind when we first started dating? *Ugh!*

At the end of my semester Demitri had to fly over to Italy for family business; I couldn't go due to finals. Once he was gone I decided that I wanted to surprise him the way he had surprised me with so many different things. I completed all my finals and got a flight to Italy; I planned to surprise him.

I easily got into his room; since I was his wife, and I waited for him to return. I had slipped into a lacy nightgown that he had delivered to me a few weeks ago and laid across his bed waiting for him to get back.

Hearing the click of the door I leaned up on my elbows waiting for him to reach his room, but then I heard another voice; a woman's voice giggling. I stood up and quickly went to the sitting area of the hotel room and flames of anger rushed throughout my body.

"What the fuck is this?!" I shouted as I reached for my coat and slid it on.

"Huh!" Demitri's eyes went wide as I approached the two of them. "Bella!" I could smell the alcohol as his breath wafted over my face.

"Yeah...Bella. At least you remember who I am? Too bad you didn't think of me before you picked this thing up!" I motioned to the tight dress wearing bimbo that he had his arm wrapped around.

"Bella...it's not what..."

"It's not what I think? Are you seriously going to try that shit?!" I turned on my heels and grabbed my luggage; starting to make my way to the door.

He jumped in front of me. "Don't leave please! Let me explain!" he pleaded.

"There is nothing to explain, I've seen enough" I spit out and walked around him.

"Bella, nothing happened!" he yelled down the hall to me as he quickly approached the elevator I was standing in front of.

I turned and glared at him while my hand pressed the button over and over; like it would make it reach the floor quicker. He got about two feet away from me before I spoke "Do not come any

closer to me!” I shouted and he halted in his steps. “What would have happened if I hadn’t been here Demitri? Hmm? You and I both know what would have happened!” I couldn’t stop the tears from escaping my eyes. “At least now I see what goes on when you ‘travel’ don’t I?” The doors opened and I stepped on.

“Bella please” he put his arm in front of the door. “I have never...this was the first time that anyone had ever come back to my room. I am so so sorry! I don’t know what I was thinking...I just let things go to far.”

“Remove your arm!” He stared at me with tears streaming down his cheeks. “NOW!” I screamed. He moved his arm and the door shut.

After getting back from Italy and spending a week alone in a hotel in Seattle ignoring my cell phone I finally picked up my phone. There were forty missed calls and sixty text messages. I started scrolling: Demitri, delete, scroll; Demitri, delete, scroll; etc. A few messages that I did read were ‘I’m sorry’, ‘I was a fool’, ‘I am a fool’, ‘Please talk to me’, ‘Tell me where you are at least’, etc. After about thirty I simply hit the delete all button; I didn’t want to read any of them.

I got up and took a shower; slowly getting dressed into jeans and a t-shirt. I went back to my phone and started going through the missed calls; deleting the call history I simply went straight to my voicemails. I had thirty voicemail messages; I started going through them one by one trying to get through them without hearing too much of his crying, sobbing, or pleas. I couldn’t bear it any longer and I just decided to delete all the messages; however, there was one message that wasn’t Demitri. It was dated yesterday and it was Sue; she was upset.

On my way to Forks I called Alice who answered on the first ring. “Where are you?” she answered.

“I am about halfway; how far are you?” I responded.

“I’m already here” she paused and I was confused. “I was already here...visiting.”

“Oh, okay well I will be there soon. How is she?”

“It’s not good. She won’t talk or eat; we don’t know what to do” she sighed and I heard the faint sound of sadness in her voice.

“I’ll be there soon” I hung up and upped my speed. I had made it in record time.

Immediately heading upstairs to my room after I arrived to the house I walked into my room and my heart felt like it was being crushed. Alice lay on the bed next to a much distraught Rose. I could see the tracks of the tears on her cheeks, the glassy glaze over her eyes, and the pain in her face.

“Oh fuck” I whispered as I hurried to the side of the bed and fell to my knees beside her.

“Rosalie? Hey?” I ran my hand over her cheek wiping away the tears.

“She won’t say a thing” Alice sighed. “I’ve been trying, but she just won’t...” then tears started to flow from Alice who buried her head into Rosalie’s side as she wrapped her hands around her tightly. “Please Rose...Please”

My tears couldn’t be kept in; they flowed freely and I threw myself over Rose’s lifeless body. Emmett arrived to the house that night and he stayed with Rose; while Al and I slept in my bed.

It was two days later that I was brushing Rose’s hair that she grabbed my hand and rolled over looking directly at me. “It’s my fault” she whispered. I shook my head, but before I could speak she spoke again. “I wished that I wasn’t pregnant when I found out; I got what I wished for.” Sobs started to rip through her chest loudly. I pulled her up to my chest and we rocked and cried together. Emmett appeared quickly; having heard her sobs. Alice was right behind him.

“Move!” Alice shouted as she pushed Em out of her way and ran directly to us; wrapping her arms around us and rocking with us.

“Can I get...or do anything?” Emmett spoke softly and with anguish all over his face.

“Forgive me” Rose mumbled into my chest.

“Oh baby!” Emmett hurried to the bed and pulled her away from us and into his lap. “Don’t even ask that...there is nothing to forgive!” He started crying with her. “Forgive me, Rose, please?”

“You, for what?” she whispered.

“For not being there when....when this all....” her sobs cut him off and he hugged her tighter as he kissed the top of her head. They stayed that way for hours.

Alice and I left them to be alone. Al went back over to her house and I grabbed the bottle of Jack out of the cabinet with a glass. I started outside, but then when I saw the old ladder to the tree house I couldn’t help but climb it.

I was sitting against the old musty cushions that we had put in here thinking about the past, the present, and my future. I was trying to reconcile what I wanted to do about my future; my marriage. I sighed deeply and finished off my glass of momentary stress relief.

Pouring my second glass loud footsteps scared me as they came up the ladder. When I heard the steps come toward the doorway of the tree house I spoke.

“Jesus Alice, could you stomp any louder up the ladder? You’re going to fucking break it!” I laughed.

“Alice is in the house” I snapped my head to the doorway; it wasn’t Alice.

EPOV

I saw her climb the ladder and I fought the urge to go up there after her for about forty-five minutes. I had learned from Alice that Rose had lost the baby, so I knew what Bella was doing in Forks; however, I couldn't help but see how pained she looked before she climbed up the tree house ladder.

I resisted. Instead I thought over the past, the present, and the future. My future was now so unknown. It had been almost a month since Glenda had filed for divorce.

Getting home late one night I walked in to find her things were gone and there was a large envelope on the kitchen counter. On top of the large envelope was a note.

Edward,

I will always care and love for you, but our lives just no longer work; not together. We want different things and our schedules prevent us from being truly happy. I want to be able to find happiness and for you to find true happiness.

Please forgive me for the way this is happening, but I know that if I see you I won't move forward the way I need to.

Be happy.

Love, Glenda

I couldn't say that I had been shocked. Not after the arguments over the lack of time we were together, my 'closeness' with Tanya (Glenda was sure I was attracted to her and possibly on the verge of cheating with her), and the difference in desires we both had. I had pressed the children issue again, and it resulted in a huge fight where I had left the house for the night.

Caring and loving each other was never a problem; however, just making it work or wanting to make it work seemed to be our true issue.

So I had come home to my parents; having been here for the past two weeks trying to sort out my life when I learned that Bella had arrived here for Rose. I had no intention on going over there or even letting her know that I was in town; however, once I saw her go up to the tree house I could only hold out for so long. I almost wished that she would come down and go back in the house before I stood up, but she never did.

She thought that I was Alice when I got to the doorway and she was clearly shocked to see me in the doorway.

"E-edward?" she breathed out.

"In the flesh" I joked. "What are you doing?" I motioned to the bottle and glass at her side.

She blushed. “Oh, just trying to decompress from life” she smiled weakly.

“Well then, do you have another glass” I laughed as I sat down across from her.

She smiled “Sorry, but here” she poured a full glass and handed it to me.

“What about you?” I smiled crookedly.

She winked at me and put the bottle up to her lips; drinking from the bottle directly. I laughed and took a large gulp out of the glass.

The full bottle of Jack seemed to go rather quickly and soon we were laughing about the past, teasing each other about things from our childhood, I talked more freely about Glenda divorcing me, and the more we talked the more slurred our words had gotten. I also noticed the distance between us shorten more and more. At one point I remember being able to smell a mixture of the Jack and of her perfect strawberry scent. That’s about the last thing I remember.

I woke up in the tree house; pitch black darkness. “Bella?” I whispered but she was no where. I had a bottle and a glass next to me. I stood up and felt dizzy and nauseous. After getting back into my parents house I went straight to bed.

Waking up to bright light was highly unpleasant; realizing that I didn’t have my shirt or pants on was a little unsettling. I didn’t remember taking them off. Slowly standing from the bed I scanned my bedroom for my clothes, but didn’t find them. I drug my ass into the shower and hoped that the hot water would bring back last night; it did. I gasped out loud in the shower as I realized what had happened last night.

After drying quickly and putting on fresh clean clothing I headed to Alice’s room; she wasn’t there. So I started to cross the tree house when I heard a car door shut. I looked down and saw Bella sitting in a dark car, then I saw Demitri walk around the car and they pulled away.

“What the fuck!” I said out loud and sat down with my feet hanging over the side. I leaned my head against the railing and thought about last night.

BPOV

I woke up in the dead of night; it was pitch black. I groaned and sat up. My head was spinning and my mouth felt like I had chewed on Q-tips for a couple of hours. I stretched and realized that my shirt was the only thing that I had on. I felt movement and looked down to see Edward lying there in only his boxers. *Fuck, fuck, fuck! Clearly I had done enough of that! Shit shit shit! I am now a fucking hypocrite!*

Quickly I slid my underwear and jeans on; stuffing my bra in my pocket. I hurried to my room and into the shower. I climbed into my bed and forced myself to not think about what had happened or how much a whore I was.

Alice woke me in a hushed voice. “Hmm?”

“Bella, Dimitri is here” I sat up quickly.

“He’s what?!” she nodded with wide eyes. While I had been here I had told Alice everything about Italy and we shared our life in general.

“That’s right tall, dark, rich, and fucking asshole is here! Now get up before I go down there and kill him!” I grabbed her arm.

“I don’t say anything to him please. Trust me when I say that he is not the only one who is guilty” I put my head in my hands.

“He’s not? What? Okay crazy, now you have totally lost me” she crossed her arms over her chest.

I shook my head. “I’ll be down in ten minutes” I said quickly as I rushed to the bathroom to brush my teeth, pee, and then threw on some jeans and a t-shirt.

It felt as if I was taking the walk of shame as I approached Dimitri as he waited on the couch with Alice glaring at him; Sue feeling uncomfortable because of Alice, and Charlie talking his ear off about baseball.

When he saw me he moved quickly to stand in front of me and wrapped his arms around me. “I have been trying to find you for days now” he sighed in relief and then pulled me into a large hug. He pulled back and looked straight into my eyes “I have never been so stupid in all my life Bella, please forgive me. Please believe me that nothing happened, nothing has ever happened, and nothing will ever happen again.”

From the corner of my eye I saw Charlie getting a scowl on his face. I grabbed Dimitri’s hand and pulled him into the kitchen so we were alone. “Please my beautiful, I swear…”

“Please keep your voice down” I begged.

He looked shocked and confused “They don’t know?” I shook my head.

“Well, Alice does” I shrugged. “I didn’t want to talk about my problems with Rose going through such a terrible time.

He sighed “How is she doing?”

“Better. She finally started eating and Em plans to take her home tomorrow.” I stayed silent for a moment. “I think that we should take this discussion elsewhere.”

“Okay, where would you like to go? Home?” he looked desperate.

“There is a coffee shop we can go to” I needed coffee something fierce.

Once we got to the coffee shop and both had our drinks in front of us we sat in silence; Demitri spoke first.

“Bella please believe me when I say that I will never be able to express how sorry I am to have done this to us...” I could feel the tears stinging my eyes already. “Please do not cry, I am truly the worst husband alive...but I promise that I can be better for you.”

“Stop!” I shouted; creating stares from others. My tears were now flowing freely and Demitri quickly moved to kneel in front of me; his arms around my waist and his head in my lap.

“Please forgive me” he begged.

“I can’t” I croaked out.

“Oh god, please” he begged again. I tried to remove his hands; I was disgusted with myself, not him.

He clung to me for dear life; not letting go. So I just spit it out in a hushed but forceful tone “I spent the night with someone.”

Demitri drew back slowly and looked into my face; I could see the fury and the rage. “When?” he growled.

“After I returned from Italy and...” he cut me off.

Tears pouring from his eyes “Oh God I pushed you to it.” He buried himself back into my lap.

“No, no, no!” I would not let him take the blame for my indiscretion. “I was the one that did it, not you. Just because you did it, doesn’t mean that I should have in return. I drank way too much and then we were just talking with each other and...” he put his hand over my mouth.

“I don’t want to know” he removed his hand and left the coffee shop.

Feeling all the eyes from the coffee shop patrons on me; I kept my head down looking at the table and drank my coffee. Once I was finished I grabbed my purse and headed out the door.

Pulling my cell phone from my purse as I walked I called Alice to come pick me up. “That asshole left you?! Why all the fucking...” I cut her off.

“Calm down. Can you come get me? I’m walking in the direction of home now.”

“What?! Don’t walk, I’ll be there in five.”

“Al, I need the walk to clear my head, take your time” I sighed. As I hung up I heard his voice

behind me.

“Bella” I turned to see Demitri closing the distance between us.

My eyes were wide with shock as he wrapped his arms around me and held me tightly. “I don’t care” he whispered.

I pushed him away “No, you have to care. I care! It’s wrong...it’s all wrong. I’m a slut, don’t you get that. I broke our vows.” I started crying as I shook my head and backed away from him.

He grabbed me quickly before I was too far away from him. “No Bella, we both made a mistake and we both need to work on our marriage.” There was no real emotion to his face, but his voice was sincere.

“I can’t live with myself, so neither should you” I tried to turn away but he stopped me. “I have to wait for Alice to come...” he cut me off.

“Call her and tell her that I will be bringing you home” I shook my head and argued as he pulled me to his car. I tried to call Al, but got no answer; I left a message. I sent her a quick text and told her that Demitri was bringing me home. I heard my phone buzz after I threw it in my purse, so I figured she was confirming that she had gotten my text.

The ride home was short, but it was enough for Demitri to state that he would wait for me to decide what I wanted to do, but to him we only needed to work harder on our marriage and on forgiving each other’s mistakes. I swallowed hard as he leaned in and kissed me quickly before I got out of the car.

I left the car and entered the house where Alice was sitting in the living room waiting for me. “I’m so sorry that I didn’t leave immediately. I was telling Edward good bye before he left.” She hugged me.

I know my eyes showed shock and disappointment. “Um...he...Edward was here?” I had to choke out the words.

Alice eyed me for a moment, but then just answered me. “Yes, he was visiting our parents, but then he said that he needed to get back to his life.” She shrugged and watched me closely.

I started to cry; Demitri didn’t hate me when I hated myself, Edward had just left me without saying anything, I was a mess. Alice pulled me to the couch and held me until I had calmed enough to tell her the whole story.

“Holy shit!” she said loudly.

“Shhh! Don’t bring Charlie or Sue in here!” I scowled. “So how big of a slut do you think I am?” I hid my face in my hands.

“Jesus Christ Bella! It was just a drunk mistake. You both had such unresolved feelings for each other, mixing alcohol in with it just was a recipe for disaster” she spoke as she rubbed my back.

“It’s my fault. I should have left that tree house the moment he entered it. I am an idiot!” I started to cry again.

“Well, do you want to work things out with Demitri or not?” She lifted my head up to look directly at her.

“W-what?” I stammered.

“It’s as simple as that Bella. What do you want?” she asked again.

“I don’t want to break my vowels; I said for better or for worse Alice” I spoke truthfully. “But it’s clearly too late for that...” she broke in.

“Well then I think you need to go to Demitri and discuss this more; maybe even go to marriage counseling. I think there are a few more things that you need to resolve” she smiled softly at me.

“But my feelings for...” she cut me off.

“Yes, but you took your vowels. You said yourself that you want to stand by those, right?” She raised an eyebrow.

I simply nodded and she sighed. I tried to read her face, but I couldn’t.

The next day after Emmett and Rose went home I called Demitri to tell him that I would be home that night, but we needed to talk; a lot.

I arrived home to thousands of roses in the entry way of the house, soft music, and the smell of a divine dinner. Walking into the dining room I found Demitri in a full black suit smiling at me; he offered me a seat and then we sat at the table. I could hardly eat; I was still disgusted with myself.

“Demitri you shouldn’t have done all of this” I felt even worse now.

“Mia bella Bella, you deserve much more...” I cut him off.

“I don’t deserve anything but your anger Demitri! How can you sit there when you know I’ve been with another man? I can’t even look at myself in the mirror!” I felt the tears stinging and I tried to keep them from flowing over the brim.

“Please Bella. I feel like I pushed you into the arms of someone else, because of what I almost did. I partially blame myself.”

“Stop it, it was my fault. Be mad at me damn it!” I stood up pushing the chair back with the floor protesting with a loud screech.

“What do you want me to say Bella? That I think you are a tramp?” I nodded “Well I can’t! I don’t think that you are. I think you made a mistake. Do I like what you’ve done, fuck no, but I can only try to make things better now!” I felt some relief that he had actually shown some type of emotion and outburst.

We talked, argued, and even yelled until the early morning hours. In the end we agreed to start slowly with each other and to go to counseling. I wanted to be completely honest about the night with Edward, but Demitri was adamant about not knowing who it was that I had been with. He said that knowing would only cause him to dwell on it and possibly even seek the person out; which would be bad for both of us in the end.

I tried to contact Edward once, but he never answered my call or the voicemail I left him. I had left it at that and tried not to think about that night; focusing on my marriage.

The counseling was helping us through the trust issues we now held with one another; however, it also started to help us resolve other issues; his lack of confrontation with me and so forth. One month into counseling we finally started to share a bed again; the first night became a long all night session of love making. Two months in and we really were almost the perfect couple; yes we argued, but we had learned how to disagree with each other in a more effective way.

I had not thought about that night with Edward; that is until the little white stick gave me a positive result.

A/N: Okay I know some of you will not be happy with the ‘cheating’ but it happens. Even in the best of marriages. Don’t hate on me too much. There will be no more ‘cheating’ so rest easy.

So, probably one more chapter that will cover a long time period and then it will be back into ‘current chapters’ as before.

I am all for criticism, but please don’t hate on me! LOL

#####

Chapter: 24

Chapter 24 – A Year in the Life and Death

BPOV

So the result of a plastic white stick that you piss on sentenced me to wait for an eternity in the lobby of my gynecologist. Oh the mess that I have gotten myself into. If I thought that I couldn't forgive myself before, now I was sure that I was not only sentenced to hell in the afterlife but that I would also have to live out the hell I was creating in my mortal life. The night in the tree house consistently flooded my mind everyday since that little pink line appeared before my eyes.

"Mrs. Fiorello" the short plump nurse called from a door at the side of the room. I grabbed my bag and followed her. "So we just need to do a couple of basic things; a couple of medical questions, symptoms, and then the standard stats" she smiled at me brightly as I groaned internally.

I felt my phone vibrate as she was taking my pulse and blood pressure. When she stepped away to write down the stats I flipped my phone open to see it was a text from Alice; wanting to meet for lunch. Of all the days for her to want to meet up, ugh, there was no way that she wouldn't see right through me and know that something was up. I sent her a quick text telling her that I was in an appointment and wasn't sure when I would be free; hoping that this would push off the lunch until another day.

The nurse escorted me back to the little beige room; where I sat waiting alone in nothing but a thin white and green print hospital gown. I began to wonder how many other women sat in this same position feeling the same dread as I was feeling. In the midst of my thoughts Doctor Gray entered with a small knock and a large smile.

"Congratulations, your urine test was positive; however, we will also be doing a blood test and some blood work as well" she said matter-of-factly. I groaned and her expression changed. "Not an expected pregnancy I take it?" she raised an eyebrow.

"You could say that" I lie back on the table and put my feet into the dreaded stirrups. Thoughts of what this pregnancy was going to mean suddenly rushed over me.

After what felt like forever the doctor finally moved away from the end of the table and she came around to my left with a small black box in her hand. She moved the material of the gown away from my stomach and placed a small wand to my stomach. 'Woosh woosh woosh' suddenly filled the room.

"Is that..."

"That's the heartbeat" she smiled and I actually smiled with her. "It sounds perfect." She removed the wand and with it the sound of my baby's heartbeat. "Since you are not completely sure about how far along you are we are going to send you over to the ultrasound technician so that they can check everything out and get us a better idea of what's been going on in there." The doctor excused herself and the nurse came back to escort me to the technician.

Sitting in the waiting area of the lab I looked down at the photo in my hand. It was a fuzzy white blob that resembled a gerbil, but I knew that that was my baby over two months along; Edward's

baby. I instantly felt nauseous and ran for the closest bathroom with my hand over my mouth.

As my breakfast made a second appearance my phone buzzed once again. I splashed my face with cold water and rinsed out my mouth. I looked at my face in the mirror and felt disgusted with myself. I grabbed my phone out of my purse on the way to the waiting area. Alice, again.

B, Let's do a late lunch then. When can you meet me? A.

I took a deep breath and then exhaled.

A, I'm sorry, 2day not a good day. B.

A minute later my ring tone went off. I put my head in my hands and then took my phone out of my purse again.

"Hello" I answered with my eyes closed.

"What's wrong?" Alice had her worried voice going.

"Nothing is...wrong. I am just still at my appointment..." the nurse cut me off.

"Mrs. Fiorello, we are ready for you" she announced.

"Where are you at?" Alice interrogated.

"I'm at the doctor and I have to go. I'll call you later okay" I hung up before she could respond. I took my millionth deep breath and followed the nurse into the lab.

Leaving the medical building I knew that I would have to tell Demitri and I wasn't sure if we could 'work' through this anymore and it was going to crush him; I was going to crush him. I cried the whole way home.

Demitri arrived home around seven at night and I was sitting at the dining room table with my head in my hands.

"Bella?" His voice pulled me from my thoughts and I sat up straight; though I kept my eyes on the table. Now I knew that I could probably just tell Demitri that he was the father and lie to everyone; however, if our marriage counselor had taught me anything then it was that the lie would eventually do more damage than just being honest.

"Please sit down" I whispered and swallowed the sob that was threatening my throat.

"Bella, what it is? What's wrong? What..." he knelt beside me and took my hand.

I pulled my hand away "I'm pregnant" I choked out and the tears fell over my cheeks.

Out of the corner of my eye I saw excitement start to flash across his face. Before I could let that excitement set in too deep I blurted it out. "I'm over two months pregnant" I sobbed and put my head in my hands.

I felt him tense and stand up next to me; he knew what I was saying. As I heard him leave the room I dropped my head into my arms on the table and bawled my eyes out; the same that I had been doing since I got home.

That night I went directly to one of the guest bedrooms and climbed into the bed; I was sure that I was the last thing he would want to see in his bed. I didn't hear or see Demitri for two days; I wasn't even sure if he had even been home at all.

Sitting Indian Style on the guest bed with my back to the door I was working on some assignments for my courses. I hadn't heard him come in the room; the thick carpet hiding his foot steps. I jumped when I felt the bed shift next to me. I sat looking at him as he stared directly into my eyes. I didn't know what to say.

"So..." he breathed out and I started to vomit before he could finish.

"Demitri I am so sorry. I never meant for any of this...oh god. I'm so so so sorry. I thought about terminating the pregnancy, but I just...I just can't do it. I understand if you want me to leave...I mean, I completely..."

"Bella stop!" he didn't yell but his tone was stern. I quickly shut my mouth and sat there biting my lip. "I do not want to hear you mention killing the baby again; not that it even crossed your mind. I will not tolerate that at all. I don't know what I want to do at this point; I just need time to process it all." He put his hand on his face and rubbed it.

"I'm so sorry. I – I – I think we should discuss who..." before I could finish he had grabbed me by my shoulders.

"DO NOT SAY HIS NAME!" I saw the tears in his eyes and as he let go of me I felt his body relax next to me. "If I know who it is...I will kill him Bella; just don't." He stood and walked out of the door. I collapsed onto my bed and cried; for the billionth time now.

A couple of months had passed and Demitri and I had been working through everything with our therapist. We still slept in separate rooms and basically lived semi-separate lives. I knew that it wouldn't be long before it was obvious that I was pregnant; the small bulge would soon pop into a bump.

First I confided in Rose about being pregnant though I felt guilty for talking about it with her; Rose and Emmett had been trying to get pregnant again, but were not having any luck. They both had been to visit a fertility specialist only to find out that even if Rose were to get pregnant again that she would most likely miscarry again. They were now considering adoption; which was suggested by Esme. However, Emmett wanted to get married first, so Rose was in the middle of planning the wedding with Alice's help; of course.

Rose was thrilled for me; however, I figured she wouldn't be so thrilled if she knew every detail of my horror story. Only Alice was fully aware of all the details; all except the one detail growing larger everyday. I feared Alice's reaction.

Sue and Leah were thrilled, Charlie was a little shocked; mainly because I don't think he wanted confirmation that his daughter was having sex. Sue and Leah immediately started planning out a baby shower that I told them was unnecessary.

When I finally confided in Alice about the pregnancy she immediately made the connection, which is what I had been afraid of and why I put her off longer than anyone else.

"Oh my god, Bella. Is it..." I cut her off quickly.

"Shh..." I hushed her quickly. "Alice let's just not go there right now, please."

"Bella you can't honestly expect me to lie to him" she brought her voice lower and whispered "He's my brother."

"Alice I am not confirming or denying anything, right now I need to figure out my life. Please just understand that" I pulled the best pleading eyes and face look that I could.

She huffed and then sighed "Fine, but if I'm ever asked...I can't lie about it. You understand me?!"

"I understand...and I am so sorry to put you in this position. I just...I..." the tears started; my cheeks and my tear ducts had become very close friends.

"Shhhh..." she moved out of her chair and wrapped her arms around me. "I know it's all crazy and...well it's fucked up right now. It's okay, please just calm down."

She asked me about Demitri and I told her about our 'separate' living. We talked for about another hour before we said our goodbye and made plans to have lunch again soon.

More months passed and my stomach was a clear indicator of my 'condition' as well as the fact that regular clothes were no longer an option. Thankfully Alice had already researched the best place to buy practical and non-hideous maternity clothing. It was nice to not hate the clothes that I had to wear; since I had a little less than three more months to wear them.

Climbing out of the shower one afternoon I was surprised by Demitri. He was standing at the open door of the guest bathroom. I grabbed a towel quickly and wrapped it around myself.

"I didn't...know you were there" I stuttered, blushed, and then felt guilty for having the large bump.

"I should've knocked" he whispered out breathily.

“I’ll be out in just a minute” I turned to grab my robe, but stopped when I felt his arms come around me and his hands land on my stomach. “Demitri...” I almost started to sob.

His fingers fanned out on my stomach as he growled in my ear “You have never looked more beautiful Bella.” I gasped as he turned me around and then lifted me bridal style toward the guest room door.

“Demitri...” he cut me off.

“You are not a guest in this house, you are my wife who is carrying MY child” he spoke sternly and laid me across the bed; climbing in next to me.

He pulled the towel away from my body and placed his hand across my bare stomach. “Am I able to feel anything yet?” I nodded.

“Yes, but” I swallowed hard as the tears streaked down the side of my head “he isn’t moving much right now.”

“He?” Demitri looked to my face quickly. I nodded and he smiled. “If you have those photos I would like to see them” he said in a low loving tone as he pressed his lips to my stomach and then trailed them up my body until he claimed my lips.

Demitri made love to me that night; twice. Since that moment I have not been allowed to be alone and he was struggling to keep his hands off of me and my stomach. The first time he felt the baby move his face was like a kid in a candy store and I had to force him to wait until we were home from the restaurant before trying to attack my body.

Rose, Alice, and I had gotten much closer again. We spent an obscene amount of time together. Rose and Emmett had a small wedding with a few friends and family. I had been put on bed rest due to early contractions so I wasn’t able to attend and I had pouted for a week about it.

A week before the baby was due, Demetri and I had started going back and forth with baby names. When Demitri mentioned that his grandfather’s name was Anthony; I instantly perked up. Demitri worshiped his late grandfather and I also had selfish personal reasons for my attraction to the name; it was the one thing that I could give his biological father.

Anthony Charles Fiorello was born weighing in at six pounds three ounces and twenty inches long. His head was dusted with light red hair and it only took one look into his beautiful little face for Demitri and me to fall in love with him even more. Alice and Rose had come bearing gifts, along with Leah, Sam, Marie, Esme, Carlisle, Sue, and Charlie. Charlie was completely flattered that we chose his name for Anthony’s middle. The day after little Tony, as Demitri had nicknamed him, was born Demitri’s mother and father arrived with his three sisters.

Time passed so quickly once we got him home. I finished school, but at the same time Anthony had gone from bottles and diapers to sippy cups and training pants.

Even with graduating early I never continued toward my Masters as I had planned and I did not start my career. I was too content to be with Anthony everyday. Dimitri was an extremely proud and doting father; even when 'little Tony' started to look less like a Fiorello.

As Anthony grew his appearance changed; he looked like me, but he had green eyes and coppery-bronze hair. At the age of nine months he had the two dead give-a-ways that he was Edward's son.

When he turned one years old Rose announced that Emmett and she were adopting a one year old little girl name Bree. I made instant plans with Rose to bring her over frequently to play with Anthony.

It was when Anthony was eighteen months old that Dimitri pleaded for me to get pregnant again. After everything he had forgiven and accepted I couldn't deny him his own child; I also knew the love that I had for Anthony and the thought of another child, a child with Dimitri, thrilled me.

By the time Anthony had turned two years old we had found that we were not successful in conceiving; which resulted in a visit with a specialist who told us that Dimitri could not have children. He was crushed and so was I. We had been struggling with each other ever since the discovery had been made.

Once we had accepted that we were not going to have a biological child of our own Anthony was two and a half years old. He had my nose, my skin, my lips, but his eyes and hair became more and more Edward. Sometimes it was hard to look at Anthony without a tear streaming over my cheek.

EPOV

When I overheard my mother talking to Sue about Bella and Dimitri expecting a baby my stomach turned. I couldn't believe that I had let it all get away from me. It could have been her and I married and having children. I sat thinking back to everything that had happened. I had been so stupid and selfish.

Over the past few years I had focused on my company and becoming a man. Tanya had hinted at wanting to get involved, but I quickly and easily turned her down stating that we worked together. I had dated a few different women, but never let anything serious develop. I needed the time to be on my own and to get my own life without someone else defining me.

I was proud of where I had gotten my company. Cullen Sound Studio was a highly respected and sought after production company. We had signed many new artists and even had established recording stars coming to us. The company had grown from a fifteen man team to over two hundred employees and an expansion to our office space; which Esme helped to design and decorate.

Now that I was comfortable with the company I devoted more time to my family and friends. I spent at least two nights a month with Alice and Jasper for dinner or just going out. Rose and Emmett had adopted a little girl named Bree, who I was in complete adoration over. She was like my own daughter and Rose often yelled at me for spoiling her when I would show up with gifts and junk food, or when I would show up and ‘kidnap’ her from her parents so I had a ‘date’ for an afternoon at the playground or ice cream parlor. On the days that I had shown up and Rose had Bree at Bella’s to visit with her I would honestly say that I was upset; both because I knew Bree was playing with Bella’s son and also because Bree made me happy to be around.

When Bree turned three years old the whole family had become ecstatic when Rose and Emmett announced that they were expecting a baby. Rose was already five months pregnant and they had kept it to themselves since there was the risk that she would have a miscarriage. At seven months pregnant Rose was put on bed rest, so I took over with helping out with Bree. Since Emmett still traveled a lot for football Rose needed as much help as possible. I knew that Bella was helping her out, but I figured this was the perfect chance for me to spoil my little Bree.

One afternoon I decided to stop by unexpectedly to ‘kidnap’ my little Bree. When I arrived I noticed an unfamiliar car in the driveway. Stepping out of my car I heard laughter and loud giggles coming from the back yard.

Walking around the house I unlocked the childproof fence and saw the large bouncer that I had bought Bree for being completely potty trained. *That’s right Uncle Edward spoiled her a little bit, just a little bit.* I could see Bree’s brown hair bouncing around inside, but there was also an unknown reddish-brown head. I stepped closer looking at a familiar hair color.

“Edward?!” I snapped around quickly to see Alice and Rose sitting on the back porch; both of them wide eyed; Rose was in surprise and Alice looked like it was fear?

“Hi I was going to pick up Bree, but I guess she has a friend over.” I smiled and walked over to the porch. “How are you feel...” That’s when she appeared in the back door; bouncy brown hair pulled high on her head and brown eyes as deep and beautiful as they always would be. She stopped abruptly; one foot outside one left in. She bit her lip and goddamn it if I didn’t feel a twitch behind my zipper; she still could make me react to her without on touch. “Uh...hi Bella” I forced out.

“H-hi” she stammered.

“Well Edward” Rose broke the deafening silence. “Bree has company today, but how about tomorrow?” I turned to Rose and smiled at her.

“Sure. I’ll call you tomorrow before I stop.” I turned back to Bella and Alice. “Bye.” They both nodded and I turned to leave, but a small disheveled bronze haired boy stopped me in my tracks. He was running after Bree who was heading straight for me.

Bree jumped into my arms and squeezed me tightly as she giggled and planted a kiss on my cheek. “How’s my girl today?” She laughed as I tickled her stomach.

I was suddenly distracted when I heard Bella's voice. "Tony come here baby" she said just loud enough, but not at a normal volume. I looked over to see the little boy walk to Bella and climb into her arms. She quickly disappeared into the house with him.

Placing many kisses on Bree's head before I put her down; I said goodbye again and headed to my car.

The car ride home was uncomfortable; thoughts of Bella going through my mind. There was one more thing that kept nagging at me; the little boy, I think Bella called him Tony. He was so familiar, yet unfamiliar. I thought maybe it was because he looked like Bella or maybe even Dimitri. I gave up and brushed the thoughts out of my head, instead I thought about what I would plan for Bree tomorrow.

BPOV

After the run in with Edward I almost had a nervous break down. I had stood in Rose's kitchen praying that he would leave and not come in the house. I was sure that he was going to see his own eyes looking back at him. Once Alice told me he had left I packed Tony and myself up; heading straight home.

A month later Rose gave birth to Riley Jonathan McCarty; he had the bluest eyes and his head was covered in thin wrinkled blond hair; I was sure that he would have curls or wavy hair as he got older. Alice and I lavished many gifts on the newest arrival.

More months passed; Anthony and I were home alone while Dimitri was in Italy. Dimitri was supposed to arrive back to Seattle tomorrow morning. I packed up a travel bag of snacks, DVDs, books, and toys for Anthony in the car and at the airport when we went to welcome Dimitri home.

I woke the next morning to the sound of the home phone and my cell phone ringing in time with each other. After stretching I yawned and started to sit up. Mrs. Jenks burst through my bedroom door in tears and sobbing loudly.

I jumped out of bed. "What is it?!" I yelled as I ran to her as she collapsed on the floor. "What is it Mrs. J?!?!? What?!!" I don't know why but terror instantly filled my body and I began to shake.

"The plane....." she sobbed. I could feel the tears burning my eyes before they started to fall. "It crashed" she cried in agony.

I felt my chest rip apart in that instant.

#####

#####

Chapter: 25

A/N: So I have gotten some of the most passionate reviews over the previous chapter and I just want to thank every one of you. Even those who were pissed off and angry about it, I still feel rewarded that I was able to strike such passionate feelings in any of my readers.

You all have to be the best reader/reviewers ever!!!!

Now grab a snack, fasten your seat belts, and hold on for the roller coaster drama that I have been promising. It's going to get chaotic around here! :o)

Chapter 25 - Diagnosis

BPOV

It was Anthony who snapped me out of my 'space out' as I sat in my bedroom staring at the black dress laid across the bed for me to put on.

"Momma" I looked over to him and smiled as he held his arms out to me. I pulled him into a tight hug and kissed him firmly on top of his head.

He was too young to understand what had happened; that the man he knew as his father would no longer walk through our front door, no longer teach him Italian, and no longer lay next to me. I felt the tears start again and saw Anthony's confused face as he looked at my face.

"Hey Anthony why don't we go get you dressed?" Mrs. Jenks had come and lifted him from my lap as I wiped the tears away.

"Thank you" I looked up to her and tried to smile, but it just wasn't working. She nodded and carried him away.

Alice appeared a moment later wearing all black; I felt like I was trapped in a black in white movie. "Come on Bells we need to get you dressed" she took my arm and pulled me over to the bed where she helped me into the black dress and the shoes.

I met Anthony in the hallway before we both headed to the large black limousine. Aro, Demitri's business partner, helped us both into the car and climbed in next to us. Demitri's family was following behind us.

The church was packed full of family, friends, and business associates. There were also reporters posted out front of the church trying to get pictures and interviews. I sat clinging to Anthony in the front row with Charlie's arm wrapped around my shoulders. Sue was on the other side of Anthony. I wiped away so many tears that I knew Alice's make up job had been pointless.

After many speakers, prayers, and everyone had listened to the priest it was time to approach the closed casket. My heart ached knowing that underneath that lid was my husband; my lover; and my best friend. I would never hear him sing to me in Italian or be surprised by one of his grand gestures again. One hand quickly went to the top of the casket to hold myself up. Charlie quickly appeared next to me and walked me out of the church; Sue brought Anthony out. The camera flashes were annoying and I hurriedly climbed into the limo with Anthony. When I saw Rose, Leah, and Alice climb into the car with me I broke down into a sobbing mess.

The burial went smoothly and once Demitri's body was laid to rest; we all gathered at a large country club in Seattle. Alice had planned the whole thing while I had lain as a zombie in bed for a week after I got the news that he had died when his plane was struck by lightning over Kansas.

I sat at a table with Demitri's family and my own as guests conversed and offered their condolences. Watching Anthony play with cousins was the highlight of my afternoon.

Standing at the bar waiting for my second glass of Chardonnay I heard someone clear their throat behind me. I turned around and looked into the eyes of my son; though the eyes were not on my son's face. My breathing hitched; I hadn't even thought about Edward attending. Now I stared him in the face feeling disgusted with the choices I had made in the past.

"Bella, shit, I am so sorry for the loss" his eyes dropped to the floor. "I can't...I really don't even know what to say." I tried to smile again, but the only thing that made me smile was Anthony.

As soon as I thought about him he appeared next to me. "Momma" I looked down to him. "Cookie?" he requested.

"Hey there little Tony, let Aunt Alice get you a cookie okay?" I set him down and Alice led him over to the table.

I turned back to Edward who was watching Anthony with Alice. "Thank you" I said quickly; trying to pull his attention away from the little boy that was his; the child I had kept from him. I didn't need this to go down today. I couldn't take any more right now; no matter how selfish I had already been I was continuing for now.

He turned his attention back to me with a calculating look. We hugged briefly and I returned to the family table.

EPOV

I almost ran to her when she was about to collapse by his casket. I still couldn't believe that Demitri was dead; that his plane had gone down because of lightning. I was still in shock about it, but I could see that Bella was in more than just shock she was lost. I wanted to comfort her, but I knew it wasn't my place.

Once we arrived to the country club I sat with my family; my mother and father, Alice and Jasper, Rose and Emmett, and Seth sat with us. I saw Bella approach the bar and I excused myself from the table; heading straight to her.

Not knowing what to say I cleared my throat and she turned around. I was offering her my condolences when her son appeared at her side. She lifted him up to her, but as she did it I got the clearest look of his face. He looked like Bella, except for the hair and the eyes. When Alice appeared calling herself 'Aunt Alice' something clicked in my head; the boy looked absolutely nothing like Demitri or their family.

After our brief conversation I headed back to my table. I sat there watching the boy with Alice and with the other little kids. Out of the corner of my eye I noticed my mother looking at me. I turned to her.

"Mom?"

"Hmm?" she answered.

"What is Bella's son's name?" I looked at her intently.

"Uh...Anthony. Why dear?" I shook my head.

"How old is he?" I asked while keeping my eyes locked on the Anthony.

"He is about the same age as Bree, three and a half or so" she answered nonchalantly.

I went silent, the wheels in my head spinning at maximum overdrive.

ESME POV

I watched Edward as he approached Bella. I would be a horrible mother if I didn't realize how he still felt about her; she was the one that would always come first in his heart. For so many years I watched the bad timing in their relationship; her being so young, his marriage, her marriage, his divorce, and then her pregnancy.

When Anthony was a year old I started to notice familiarity in his features; the eyes, the hair. However, looking at Edward standing there while Bella held him in her arms I would be a fool not to recognize my son's traits in that boy. I had to bite the side of my mouth so that I didn't gasp at the table.

Edward returned to the table, but his attention was captured by the boy. I wondered if he saw what I now saw plain as day. When he began to question me about Anthony I figured that he was connecting things, but he didn't say or do anything else. He just went silent and said nothing else.

Once I had Alice alone I turned to her.

“Is Anthony Edward’s son?” Alice’s head snapped so quickly I thought she may have whiplash.

“W-what?” she stuttered; a clear sign that I was probably correct.

“I’m right aren’t I?!” I gasped. “Alice how could you keep this...”

“Mom look I don’t know anything for sure; honestly. I asked her the same thing and she didn’t answer the question.” I watched her sigh heavily and squeeze her eyes closed before continuing. “I had my suspicions, but it’s not my story to tell or even ‘gossip’ about. Not when I don’t know the entire story.”

“I won’t say a thing, for now. But I will talk to Bella about this soon.” I turned and walked out of the restroom. I returned to the table keeping my mouth shut, but I couldn’t help but look upon Anthony with complete adoration.

BPOV

After another week of zombie behavior I took a deep breath and pulled my ass out of bed. I walked aimlessly around the house feeling how cold it really felt. I entered Demitri’s home office and sat in his chair for almost an hour; staring into nothing.

“That’s it Bella! Enough!” I knew I was speaking to myself, but I didn’t care. I needed to snap out of this state I was now in. I showered and got dressed. I headed downstairs to where Mrs. J was feeding Anthony lunch. Both of them greeted me with a warm smile and Mrs. J looked a little surprised to see me.

After a cup of coffee I decided that I needed to do a few things. I walked around the house again and this time decided that I couldn’t live here; not without Demitri. It was that moment that I started to make a lot of decisions. I sat down at Demitri’s desk making a list of tasks that I wanted to accomplish.

Three hours later Mrs. Jenks came into the office with a tray of food. I smiled at her warmly and she left the room. My cell phone rang.

“Hello?”

“Mrs. Fiorello?” a deep voice spoke.

“Yes” I answered hesitantly.

“Ma’am my name is Caius Botticelli. I am a senior member of the Botticelli Law Firm here in Seattle.” I stayed silent. “We represent your late husband” he clarified. “I would like for you to come to our offices tomorrow morning to go over Mr. Fiorelli’s Last Will and Testament. His family’s presence has already been requested as well.”

“Um..sure, what time tomorrow Mr. Botticelli?”

“Nine?”

“Okay, I will see you at nine tomorrow morning. Thank you.” We hung up.

I hadn't even thought about all the legalities that were going to have to take place with Demitri's money and estate. I had signed a pre-nup before our wedding and I surely didn't expect too much from his will.

The next morning I dropped Anthony off at Rose's and headed to the law firm. Once I arrived I was shown into a room with a large oval table; Demitri's family was already seated, his mother and father both smiling at me. Aro was also in attendance, which surprised me.

“Thank you all for coming” Caius spoke loudly from the head of the table. “Today we will be discussing the last wishes of Mr. Fiorello.” I felt the tears start to form in the corners of my eyes. I took a deep breath and sat quietly listening to everything Caius had to say.

At the end of the meeting I was sitting in shock. Demitri had left his parents his Italian assets, a large sum of money for their foundation, and his mother's jewelry that he was holding. Aro had been granted forty nine percent of the record label and I gained fifty one percent. I had gasped, but Aro quickly grabbed my hand and squeezed. The house, cars, and Seattle assets were mine and fifty percent of his net worth was mine; this was roughly six million dollars. The remaining money was to be split between charities and foundations of his choice.

Three weeks following the reading of Demitri's Will I decided to contact a realtor to sell the mansion. I couldn't take living there any longer. I also started looking for another home in Seattle or nearby.

As for the record label; I let Aro run it for the most part though he kept me very involved in the decision making. I was surprised how much I had learned having just been married to Demitri for a short period of time.

It was five weeks after the Will reading that Anthony got sick. At first I simply watched over him, but when his fever spiked to one hundred and four I called the doctor. The doctor saw him that day and prescribed antibiotics along with pain/fever reducer.

Two weeks after he first got sick he still was having problems. The fever was gone but now he was complaining about pain when he went to the bathroom. The doctor ran some tests and found kidney stones. Medication was given to help Anthony get them passed through his system; however, he still kept developing stones and urinary tract infections.

After a month of treatments the doctor finally sat me down to ask me more detailed questions about my medical history and his father's medical history. We discussed everything and he just bluntly laid it all out there on the table.

“Mrs. Fiorello, you will need to contact the biological father if possible. We need that medical history. I am admitting your son to the hospital to keep him under watch for kidney failure.” I felt all the breath leave my body as I felt the shock take me over. *My poor little boy.* The tears started their familiar stream over my cheeks. “You will want to get tested as well as other family members to see if you are a blood match or even an organ match; just in case. I am going to run a few more labs on him, but it would be best to be prepared for the worst. NOT that it will be the worst. We only want to be prepared for anything. Do you understand?” I nodded; tears still pouring down my face.

I talked about every detail with the doctor for over an hour before I went to be with Anthony in his room. He looked so helpless and worn out; it made my heart ache. I curled up in bed with him until he fell asleep. Mrs. Jenks came to stay with him so I could make a visit that needed to be made.

I pulled up to Esme and Carlisle’s house and took three deep breaths before I got the courage to walk to the door. It opened before I could knock.

“I was wondering how long you would sit out there” Esme said with a smirk and little bit of acid in her voice. I sucked it up and walked in when she motioned me to enter. “So are you finally here to tell me about my grandson?”

My eyes were bulging out of my head. “Yes, I’ve had it truly figured out since the funeral when I saw Edward and Anthony close to each other.” She crossed her arms over her chest. “Honestly Bella what the hell were you thinking? Passing Edward’s son off as Demitri’s? It not fair to anyone; Demitri, Edward, and especially Anthony!” I saw the anger in her face. I broke down, but I knew that I deserved this and much much more.

“Esme I am so sorry for everything that I have caused. I thought that I was doing what was best...but I realize that I was selfish and...”

“SELFISH?!?! Oh you were much more than selfish Bella! I can’t believe that you of all people would have done this. I don’t know who you are.” She stared me down and steadied myself.

“Look I deserve all of this and more, but I am here because I need to know about your medical history. Mainly kidney problems.” Esme’s face changed to worry.

“What’s wrong?” she gasped out.

“Anthony has been sick for a month and it may be his kidneys...” she cut me off screaming for Carlisle.

Carlisle appeared a moment later at the top of the steps and once he descended to the bottom Esme began to tell him everything up to the current; that she knew about. Carlisle didn’t look shocked, so I figured that they had talked already about Anthony.

“What are the symptoms?” Carlisle turned to me with a serious doctor tone.

I went through everything that had happened; symptoms, tests, medications, and the suggestion of the doctor.

“I am going to drive up to Seattle Grace tonight to lend my assistance to this matter.” I looked at him gratefully. “Bella we have a history of PKD which is Polycystic Kidney Disease in my family. I myself had to have a kidney transplant when I was about Anthony’s age.” I know that my face read fear, dread, and pain. Carlisle wrapped an arm around me “It will be okay, but your doctor is right. Everyone needs to be tested for a donor match; including your family.”

I sniffed a few times “Charlie and Sue are already at the hospital.” I wiped the tears from my face.

Before I could say another word Esme spoke up. “Bella I don’t know if I can ever forgive what you have done to Edward and to my family” I dropped my head.

“I understand” I choked out.

“But I WILL be a part of my grandchild’s life from here on out” she said sternly.

“Esme...” Carlisle tried to intervene.

“NO Carlisle she knows or she at least will know exactly what she has caused” Esme turned on her heels and headed up stairs.

“Dear I am sorry that this all has come down to this situation” Carlisle rubbed the back of his head. “I know it wasn’t your intention, but I think that it’s going to be rough for awhile.” I nodded in understanding.

“I am so sorry Carlisle. I truly am; it’s all I can say.” I turned for the door. “Oh and thank you.”

With that I left.

I pulled out my phone and called the person who was going to hate me for the remainder of my life. He answered on the third ring.

“Bella?” his voice almost made me swerve off the road. I was terrified.

“Edward, I need to talk to you” I took a deep breath. “Are you available?”

“Now?” he said confused. “What’s wrong Bella?”

“Not over the phone” I choked out.

“Okay...how about we meet this evening after I leave the office? Did you want to go to dinner to...” I cut him off.

“No, just come to my house this evening, please?” I stuttered.

“Okay” he answered hesitantly.

The hours drug by slowly after we hung up; I paced, cried, and even screamed at myself in the bathroom mirror. I tried to mentally prepare for what I was about to do tonight, but I knew that Esme’s reaction would pale in comparison to Edwards. He was going to be irate at the very least.

Edward arrived at seven. I answered the door and led him to the dining room; we sat at the table.

“Bella, what is going on?” confusion was plastered on his face.

I stood and started to pace; sitting close to him was distracting and right now I needed all of my wits. “Please tell me what is going on?”

“First I want to say that I am so so so sorry. I truly am...I thought that I was making the right decisions, but I...I realized that I have been such a selfish bitch.” The tears started again and I saw Edward shift to stand up. “Please don’t” I put a hand up. Edward frowned “Trust me...in about three minutes you won’t want to be around me.”

“You are starting to really scare me and I don’t see how you could make me not want...” I cut him off.

“Anthony is your son” I spit out quickly and then covered my mouth as a reflex. At that moment I felt fear, panic and a little relief.

“W-what? Anthony is....” I saw Edward’s face turn white as a ghost and expressionless.

“Yes” I confirmed. “But that’s not all...”

“Wha...”

“He is in the hospital with kidney problems and I need you to get tested to see if you are a match to him; everyone is being tested” I dropped my head staring at the floor.

“I...He...Anthony....” When I looked up to his face again I watched as it went from expressionless white to full red and fury. I flinched before he even spoke.

“HOW COULD YOU?!” he screamed. I stood across the room from him saying nothing and crying. “You kept my child, my son, away from me for over three years?!” I nodded. “You Selfish Bitch!” He spit the words out and they cut through me.

“I am so sorry...”

“Save your bullshit for someone who will believe it Bella” he shouted. “You let Demitri

think...”

“He knew.”

“WHAT?! He knew that Anthony was my son and he pretended that...”

“He didn’t know that it was you, just that Anthony was not his. I tried to tell him but he refused to hear me...”

“You tried to tell HIM! What about me? Huh?!” Edward stood from the chair and crossed the room quickly hands clenched at his sides. I took a step back.

“I – I can only say that I am sorry and that I never meant...”

“You never meant for what? Never meant to keep him from me?! Or you never meant for me to find out?!” He spit out into my face and I flinched back. “Where is my son?”

“Seattle Grace” I took in a large breath before I finished. “Your father and mother left this morning to...” he cut me off again.

“They knew!” His face was a mixture of hurt and fury.

“They only found out this morning when I went to see them” I sobbed out.

“I’ll call my father on the way to the hospital.” That was the last thing he said to me before he left the house; slamming every door on his way. I fell to my knees and sobbed myself to sleep on the couch. I woke around midnight and immediately left for the hospital with some packed bags.

EPOV

I cannot believe her! I was terrified that something was wrong with the way she sounded on the phone, but I never expected her to tell me that she has hidden my son from me for three years.

“FUCK!” I screamed into the dark emptiness of my car as I drove way above the speed limit toward the hospital.

I can’t believe that she did this. Who does she think she is? How do you not tell a person that they have a son? How?!

It was at that moment that I remember her trying to contact me after the night in the tree house. Maybe she would have told me if I had answered the call or even called her back, maybe it would have built a bridge of communication for her to have told me when she found out. FUCK! This is not my fault it’s hers!!!

I rushed into the hospital and quickly got directions to the children’s floor. Once off the elevator I saw my mother, Charlie, Sue, Leah, and Alice lying around the waiting room. Alice caught

sight of me first and moved to me quickly.

“Edward?” I knew that the fury I still held was evident; her eyes widened. “She told you...about Anthony!” she gasped.

“YOU KNEW?!” I shouted and a nurse shushed me.

“Edward I didn’t know, but I suspected...and I even tried to ask Bella about it, but she wouldn’t...”

“You are no better than she is!” I stepped around her and left Alice crying by the elevators.

“Edward...please calm down it won’t do any...”

“Charlie I don’t want to be disrespectful to you, so please do not tell me to calm down” I shot at him and he looked at me with pity and understanding.

“Sweetheart” Esme wrapped her arms around me and I felt her body shake with sobs. “I am so sorry and please don’t be too hard on Alice. She was just as confused by all of this.”

“I’ll deal with Alice later, where is Anthony?” My mother showed me to his room and I walked up to his bed staring into the face of my son for truly the first time.

BPOV

When I got to the hospital everyone was sleeping in the waiting area. I headed straight to Anthony’s room. Once I entered I found Edward sleeping in a chair next to his bed. I lightly placed the bags down and started to quietly unpack some of Anthony’s things into the built in dresser/closet at the far side of his room.

I sighed as I watched them both sleep; they had so many similarities. They slack jaw when they slept and the way their brow would crease while they dreamt. I knew that Edward hated me and that it would take everything in him to just be civil with me; for Anthony’s sake.

I met with the doctor who stated that all results for the matching were complete and it was Edward who was his donor match; they had a rare blood type. He went on to explain that he would have more test results later this afternoon for Anthony’s condition and the treatment plan.

Grabbing some coffee from the lounge area of the hospital I felt his presence behind me, but didn’t hear him move around at all.

“You will hear from my attorney” he spat before he walked out. I headed back to Anthony’s room as I wiped tears from my face and curled up next to him.

A/N: So there you go...Edward is PISSED OFF!!! Not every man is like Demitri; most people would flip the hell out, just like Edward and Esme.

This is not the end of the Drama. It will carry over into the next chapter.

I would say that this story has about 5 more chapters until its finish.

#####

Chapter: 26

Chapter 26 – Legalities and Time

A/N: Again...awesome reviews!

Just Me – as always your reviews are refreshing and so detailed. LOVE THEM! I wish that you weren't an anonymous poster because I would love to be able to message you back! You're great!

1nawtyRN – I so look forward to your reviews!!! They are great!

BPOV

Anthony's results had come in and he did not need a transplant; it had been caught early enough that he would have to take medicine and I would need to change his diet. I was relieved that he at least didn't have to go into surgery at such a young age.

I ran straight from the doctor's office and into Anthony's room and hopped onto his bed with him. When told him that he would get to go home soon he was just as happy as I was.

During our eighth round of paper, rock, scissors Edward arrived. I formally introduced Edward and Anthony.

"Would you like for Edward to stay and play with you for a little bit?" Anthony looked nervous; I reassured him that I would be right back. Edward nodded curtly at me as I left the room.

Edward was good on his word. It only took a week for the papers to be delivered to my house. "That fucker is petitioning for full custody!" I shouted to Rose who was sitting with me at the hospital. "I know that I messed up and that I was selfish and inconsiderate, but Rose I was going to tell him...before I found out about Anthony being sick. I swear."

Rose looked at me with wide eyes. "You were?"

I nodded. "The day I finally pulled my zombie ass out of that bed; I sat in Demitri's office and

made a list of things that I wanted to do. That was one of them. I know that it still doesn't excuse anything... I just, I mean, Fuck Rose! Demitri said that if he knew who the father was that he would kill the guy. I was scared, I am pretty sure that he wouldn't have actually killed him. But Fuck, I don't know for sure what he would have done. What if Demitri would have messed with Edward's production company or something?"

"Well Bella even though you made a big mess of things, it doesn't mean you will lose Anthony. You can counter his petition." She sighed heavily.

"You're right, and that is exactly what I am going to do!" I pulled out my cell phone.

"WHOA! Bella, put the fucking cell in your purse and walk away" I looked up to her quickly. "NOW!" I closed my phone. "You need to think on this a bit before you engage yourself into a nasty custody battle. Think of Anthony." I sighed and sat down. Fuck her for being right. I knew I had really screwed everything up, but don't fuck with my kid.

I took Rose's advice and after Mrs. Jenks arrived the next morning I slipped out of the hospital while Anthony was still sleeping. I had made an appointment with Caius to go over the papers that I had received.

After I explained everything to Caius he didn't blink twice; that's when I realized that he had already known that Anthony wasn't Demitri's son. "Demitri told you?" Caius nodded.

"He had made adjustments to the will after Anthony was born and wanted to make sure that his wishes were legally sound with Anthony not being biologically his." I nodded in understanding. I knew that Demitri's parents were aware that Anthony was not his biological child; Demitri had told them that we used a donor since he was not able to have children; just another lie in the whole façade that I was the center of and that I wish I never would've started. "He will be lucky to get visitations by the time I am done with him Bella." I nodded and he set forth preparing my counter.

I got back to the hospital to find Edward in Anthony's room. They hadn't seen me in just outside of the doorway, so I stood back and watched for a moment. Seeing them side by side on the bed, Edward reading him a book, I felt my heart ache. There were such strong resemblances and Edward was so good with him.

Heading back to the waiting area I pulled out my cell phone and made a call to Caius.

I had taken Anthony home a week later and the court date was three weeks after I received the papers from Edward's attorney.

We sat on opposite sides of the court room without one glance in each other's direction. The judge arrived and the proceedings began. Edward's petition for full custody was read aloud and then Caius stood to go over my counter petition.

"Your honor, my client agrees to the paternity test requested by the plaintiff; however, she does

not agree to his full custodial request. She proposes that Anthony remain in her custody until he is more familiar with Mr. Cullen” I heard grumbling and looked to see Edward leaning into his attorney. Before they could object Caius continued. “After Anthony had become familiar with Mr. Cullen then Mrs. Fiorello proposes a joint custody arrangement. Mrs. Fiorello is also in the process of moving into a new home and will agree to remain close to the area of Mr. Cullen’s residence.”

I felt Edward’s eyes on me as Caius continued to go over my counter. Caius had asked me ten times if I was sure about all of this and he ensured me that he could arrange that Edward only got weekends with Anthony. I knew I couldn’t do that; not to Edward and not to Anthony.

As I was wiping tears off of my face Caius sat down, looked at me and patted my arm. Then he whispered “You are being more than generous with all of this Bella. Your willingness to cooperate and provide arrangements like this will be in your favor.” He settled back into his seat.

The judge listened to Caius and Edward’s lawyer go back and forth for another twenty minutes before the judge had heard enough; calling a twenty minute recess to review all the information. We stood as the judge left the court room.

“Coffee?” Caius looked to me as he sighed.

“Most definitely” I half smiled.

I followed Caius out of the courtroom and when the doors closed behind us I took a deep breath and exhaled.

“Bella” I tensed up at the sound of his voice. I turned around slowly.

“Edward” I responded. He was in a dark gray suit and looked as gorgeous as ever. I nodded to him briskly and started to walk around him.

“Is it true?” I spun around quickly.

“Is what true?” I narrowed my eyes at him.

“That you were going to tell me about Anthony...before all of this” his face was as expressionless as his tone.

“Who....It doesn’t matter now” he started to interrupt me, but I talked over him. “What’s done is done.” I turned quickly and left him to stand there. *Rose is a dead woman when I got a hold of her! Damn her!*

Caius and I chatted over coffee about Anthony’s medical condition and about the custody case until we were requested back in the courtroom. I looked at my watch.

“That wasn’t twenty minutes?” I looked at Caius worried.

“Calm down, I think that it’s a good thing” he took my arm and walked me back.

After the judge entered we all sat waiting for him to speak.

He cleared his throat. “Ahem”

“I have been going over this whole situation over and over; while I am not here to pass personal judgment I do feel as if you” he looked directly at me “made a very large mistake in keeping a child and father separated.” I felt the guilt that I have been carrying overwhelm me. Then he turned to Edward “And you Mr. Cullen I feel are acting out of revenge against the child’s mother.” I watched Edward’s head drop and his brow furrowed.

“Now having said that; I have made my decision in the matter of Anthony Charles Fiorello” he cleared his throat again. “I am granting in the favor of Mrs. Fiorello’s petition. I feel that she is making a reasonable offer in the matter of custody of the said child. Mrs. Fiorello is to assist Anthony and Mr. Cullen in establishing a father and son relationship. Once the child is mentally and emotionally acceptable with Mr. Cullen then the joint custody arrangement will go into effect. My suggestion is that Anthony will spend six months with Mr. Cullen and six months with Mrs. Fiorello each year. How you choose to set up those time frames is at your discretion and scheduling; however if there is a conflict the court will step in.” He looked between the both of us and I wiped away the tears that I could no longer keep in.

“Now, during the month or months that Anthony is with the other parent there will be arrangements made for visitations from the non-custodial parent; weekends, weekdays, etc. You should also establish a holiday schedule or you can appeal the courts.” He took a deep breath. “On a final note, I want to make sure you both understand that the child is not property. This little *person* needs to feel secure and loved. I trust that you both will carry forth in a civil manner for the child’s sake.” We both shook our heads in agreement. “Okay, well one last thing; the child has a medical condition, correct?” he looked directly at me.

“Yes your honor” I answered in a monotone voice.

“Hmmm...while the custodianship has been arranged, I am going to give Mrs. Fiorello sole guardianship of the child” he looked up when there was a shuffle from Edward’s desk. “Now before you get worked up Mr. Cullen, understand that this is merely for decision making in medical situations. You are his fathers and have rights; however, this allows his mother to make necessary medical decisions without ‘having’ to seek your input. She has raised the child up till now in a caring and loving home, as well as sought out medical assistance properly for the child in the past; including exposing herself in this situation. I think that you can trust that she will make the proper choices.”

The judge looked back and forth between us before he slammed the gavel on his bench “Adjourned”. After he left the courtroom I followed Caius out to our waiting car. As I was climbing in I heard him yell for me again. “Bella, wait!” My body twitched to throw myself into him and plead with him for forgiveness that I knew I would never get; that I didn’t deserve. I

stopped at the open door and turned to him as he approached. "Please don't" I said to him and he stopped a few feet from me. "We will talk about the arrangements soon. I can have my lawyer contact yours tomorrow to make arrangements, but I can't do this right now." I slid into the car and we pulled away.

"Are you okay?" Caius looked at me sympathetically.

I simply nodded and prayed that we would get back to my house quickly. I needed to just hold Anthony in my arms.

EPOV

I had promised to go directly to my parents after the hearing was over, since I did not want them to come to the courthouse with me. However, after everything I couldn't. I ended up walking past my car and through the streets of Seattle trying to absorb everything and process it all.

Bella wouldn't talk to me at all; she kept shutting me down. I tried to talk to her about what Emmett had told me; that she was going to tell me about Anthony. In no means does that excuse what she has done, but somehow knowing that she wanted me to know made my anger sway a little. I understood that she was upset and it probably wasn't the best time for confrontations, but I was still drawn to her and hated for her to be sad; even if she caused it.

Before I knew it the sun had moved drastically in the sky above and I looked at my watch to realize that I had been walking around for almost four hours. *Where the hell was I?* I looked around having no idea where I was. I found a taxi and got back to my car.

Pulling out my cell phone I remembered that I had turned it off for the hearing. After it powered up I had fifteen text messages; mostly from my mother wanting to know where I was, if I was on my way, and then they became more concerned. I deleted them all and then went to work on listening to the five voicemails that were waiting on me. First two were my mother, of course, third was my father, fourth was Alice which I deleted before listening to it, and fifth was my mother again. I called my mother and told her that I was on my way and would tell them about it all when I got there. I used the rest of the drive to work things out in my head some more.

I hadn't even put the car in park and my mother was standing at the open front door. I sighed and climbed out of the car.

"Oh baby, did everything go okay?" she wrapped me into a large hug.

"Yes" I breathed out and squeezed back. I don't care how old you are nothing feels better than your mother hugging you. "Let's get inside first, where's dad?"

"Carlisle" she yelled as she led me to the living room. We sat and my father entered the room.

I told them about the judge's decisions and we sat silently for a moment.

“Well are you pleased with that outcome or did you wish for more?” my father asked while leaning back in his leather chair.

I shrugged “I don’t know. I mean I only asked for full custody because the lawyer stated that it would look good for me to want to have him completely; which I do” I assured them. “But I didn’t want to take his mother out of his life. He doesn’t deserve that and well...he needs his mother.”

“He needs a mother Edward, not necessarily *her*” my mother added.

“Esme we talked about this...” my father leaned forward and patted her knee.

“I’m just saying” she put her hands up in surrender.

I sighed. “I didn’t think that Bella would offer up what she did. It was surprising.”

I heard the front door close and looked up to see Alice enter the room.

“What are you...?” I turned to my parents “What is SHE doing here?” I crossed my arms over my chest.

“Edward, please....I am so sorry. I was never sure...” I cut Alice’s pleading off.

“Oh, so you just suspected and didn’t bother to mention any of it to me?!” I yelled.

“Please, I never meant for this to happen. I know that I was wrong, but I just...I just was so confused about everything and then I wasn’t SURE. I didn’t want to cause a situation without being absolutely sure, and then mom approached me at the funeral and I knew that I...”

“WHAT?!” I turned to my mother. “YOU knew at the funeral?!”

My mother stood quickly and walked over to me. “Edward I didn’t know for sure, but when I saw you and Anthony in such close proximity I felt sure that he was your son. The features were just too strong in resemblance and...”

“HOLD UP” I put my hands up in the air and took a deep breath. “You knew at the funeral and you didn’t bother to say a fucking thing to me?”

“Don’t talk to your mother like that Edward” Now my father was standing next to my mom.

My mother’s face was shock and sadness. “Honey, I didn’t want to make a scene at the funeral...”

“And what about the rest of the month mother? You had plenty of time to mention this, don’t you think?” I sat down roughly onto the couch with my head in my hands. “I can’t believe this family.” I stood up quickly and headed for the door.

“Where are you going?!” my mother cried following me to the door.

“I need to get out of here; I need to just....be alone!” I shouted over my shoulder and slipped into my car. I threw it in reverse and then squealed my tires when I slammed the car into drive and took off.

Almost reaching the beach in LaPush I saw red and blue lights behind me. “Fuck!” I pulled over. When I looked out my window I looked up to see Charlie Swan standing there.

“Hey Charlie” I mumbled as I rolled my window down.

“Hey Edward” he mumbled back. “So, everything okay?”

I nodded my head.

“Okay, can you slow down a little so you don’t kill yourself? My grandson needs his father you know.” My head snapped up and I felt him pat my shoulder before walking back toward his car.

“Charlie!” I jumped out of my car.

He turned around and raised his eyebrow.

“Did you know?” I leaned against my car and Charlie walked back leaning next to me.

“Well, I didn’t ‘know’; however, when Anthony was about one and a half he smiled at me with this grin and I knew then that there was only one other boy in my life that had that hair and that grin” he nudged me with his elbow. Then he sighed. “I know that you are mad at, well at everyone, and to be honest you have every right to be. I just hope that you don’t let that anger eat you up and ruin the rest of what you will have with your son and your family.” He patted me on the back this time and headed back to his car. “Oh and don’t forget to slow down!” he chuckled as he climbed into his car.

I spent an hour at the beach thinking about everything, but I mostly focused on what Charlie had said to me. Then out of nowhere I remembered the night of the beach fire where I saw Bella grown for the first time; she was dancing with Alice and Rose, smiling so large, looked so freaking gorgeous, and she looked so perfect. Once the sun had sunk into the water I drove back to my parents.

Once again, my mother was at the open door before I got out of the car. She looked nervous enough to jump out of her skin at any moment. “Calm down mom. I love you.” She smiled and hugged me.

“I am so sorry baby, I really should’ve told you. I didn’t even...Oh I have no excuse.” Then she sighed. “I guess we have all made our mistakes...” she let her thought drift off without finishing it.

“Yes, we have; including me.” She looked at me confused. “Trust me, I have made my mistakes.” She still didn’t understand. I took a deep breath “Let’s just say that if I hadn’t been an absolute tool years ago, then I would probably have about four kids with Bella right now.” That thought alone made my heart rip even further apart.

“Honey you can’t...” Alice cut her off.

“Will you stop babying him” Then she turned to me. “Edward I know I was wrong and I am truly sorry. I also realize that you can’t forgive me and I will not ask you to. Just know that you have made your mistakes too and that I have never turned on you. This wasn’t about me choosing sides; this was simply about being confused. I am and always will be sorry. I hope that everything works out well for you and Anthony.” With that Alice walked out of the door and closed it behind her.

Charlie’s words came back to me, *“I just hope that you don’t let that anger eat you up and ruin the rest of what you will have with him and your family.”* I pulled away from my mother and ran out the door.

“Alice” she turned around shocked to see me coming after her.

“I don’t want to fight Edward...” I cut her off.

“Neither do I” she looked even more shocked now. “I realize that you didn’t intend for this to happen and though I do not agree nor am I happy about what happened I don’t want us to go on like this. You are my baby sister and I just can’t let you walk out because I am too angry about a mistake that was made.”

She ran and jumped into my arms; almost knocking me over. “Oh Edward” she cried. “I am really truly sorry. I love you so much and I would never want...”

“Will you shut up” I laughed; she smacked my chest.

We walked back into the house together and had dinner with my parents.

Bella’s and my lawyer had contacted each other and we all met up to discuss the custody arrangement. We were going to work up to the overnight and lengthy stays after two months of allowing Anthony to get familiar with me.

I pulled up to Bella’s home and took a deep breath before I went to her front door. A plump older woman answered the door and showed me through the house; which was ridiculously large and didn’t feel like Bella at all. Then I noticed all the brown boxes with a moving company’s name all over them; she was moving. “They are out back sir” the older woman stated as she walked me through a large kitchen to a set of French doors.

“Thank you” I said as I turned to head out the doors. I stopped where I was standing as I watched

Anthony run as Bella chased him. He hurried up the ladder of large swing set and Bella went up after him; both of them coming down the slide together.

Her hair was down and flowing around her from her movements and from a slight breeze. The smile instantly made me think back to that first night on the beach at the fire. Her eyes shone such love as she looked down on her, my, *OUR* son. I felt my heart swell at the vision of my son wrapped up in her arms as they laughed and giggled.

I walked out onto the back porch and Bella's whole demeanor changed once she saw me. I wanted her to go back to the minutes before I stepped out; it was that spirit in her that I had always seen inside her that drew me to her. Like a moth to a flame.

"Edward" she nodded and swallowed hard. I nodded back. She knelt down to Anthony "Remember what we talked about baby?" Anthony stared at her blankly. She sighed. "Can you say hello?"

He turned his little head to me and looking into my own eyes was so fucking surreal and scary at the same time. I was instantly in love with this little person in front of me; I had been from the moment I looked upon him, before I even knew he was mine I felt it; the same way that I had felt it with Bella. I shook off that thought.

"Hi" his little voice said as he giggled.

"Hi Anthony" I smiled. "I'm Edward" I stuck out my hand.

He gave me a strange look and crumpled up his face. "Daddy" he said and I stared at him in shock. He slapped my hand; like he was giving me five. I looked to Bella who smiled a little at me and then she stood up and headed to the porch. I picked Anthony up and hugged him tightly planting kisses on his head.

"Ew..." he giggled. Bella sat down in a chair and smiled at Anthony's reaction.

"How did he..." she cut me off.

"I've been telling him" she said.

"But..."

"I have a photo of you Edward. I've been showing it to him and telling him that you were his Daddy" she half smiled at me and then picked up a book from the table next to her.

"Thank you." She simply nodded to me and looked back to her book.

Anthony and I played for a couple of hours in the back yard before Bella said that it was time for him to eat lunch. He ran to her and climbed up her body until she lifted him into her arms and walked him into the house.

Bella discussed his new diet and his medications to me as Anthony ate. She knew that we would have to go over it again, but she figured that the more times I heard it then the better I would remember. I had to admit that she was being much more civil than I originally thought she would be today.

After he was done eating I saw him yawn and Bella quickly washed him off. She looked up to me. "Its nap time, did you want to..." I cut her off.

"Of course" I started to grab my things to go.

"Um..what are you doing?"

"Leaving so he can go..."

"I meant, did you want to put him down for his nap" she fought a small smirk that was playing on her lips.

"Oh, um yeah, sure. What does he normally do?" I answered completely embarrassed about the misunderstanding.

Bella helped me with his typical routine and then we left him to settle into sleep. "He is pretty good with napping" she said without looking at me as we went back downstairs. "Once he is in there then he usually doesn't get up until has slept. He's very good."

"I can tell" I stated. "You have done a great job with him Bella" she stopped suddenly and looked at me; like she was waiting for me to say I was joking. I wasn't; I was very serious. I saw moisture start to build in her eyes, but she turned away quietly and walked back toward the kitchen.

There was a large TV room next to the kitchen that Bella led me to. "So should I go and come back tomorrow?"

"Wait" she said quickly. "I wanted to give these to you, to look at. I am getting copies made for you." She furrowed her brow as she held out four large books.

I took them. "What are...?" I started to ask what they were as I opened the first one, but once I saw the ultrasound picture I knew what these were. I sat on the couch I was next to and couldn't stop looking at it. That was my son. I looked up and saw that Bella was over in the kitchen; she seemed to be making coffee. I looked back down at the four different ultrasound pictures. That was my son inside of my Bella. I felt the tears form and then fall as I thought about missing this.

As I turned the page there was a picture of a very pregnant Bella; Rose holding her arms behind her back as Alice was holding up her shirt and drawing a face on her belly. I couldn't hold in the chuckle.

“What?” she asked.

I held up the page. She blushed and bit her lip. *Ahh..the fucking lip! Damn it still gets me. ugh!*

“Sorry” she said as she placed a tray with coffee, cups, sugar, cream, etc.

“For what?” I asked curiously.

“I forgot that picture was in there. It won’t be in the copy that I am having...”

“I want it” I said as I turned the pages and kept my face down toward the pictures of the baby shower and then of Anthony in the hospital right after he was born. The tears really streamed now.

“Edward, I am so sorry” she stood up and left the room. I watched her walk out, but I said nothing.

She left me alone as I finished looking through the albums; his birthdays, holidays, etc. Once I was finished I laid the books on the coffee table in front of me and poured some coffee. I stood and walked around the large room as I sipped at my cup. I stopped when I saw a small row of DVD’s with white labels. They were labeled Anthony Charles Fiorello with date ranges on them. I grabbed the first one; it was labeled 28 weeks to nine months old. I clenched it to my chest and slipped it into my jacket before Bella realized that I had taken it.

I was still standing there looking at the DVDs when I heard her return. “I will have copies of those made for you as well” she said as she cleaned up the coffee tray and retreated to the kitchen.

“I should get going” I placed the coffee cup on the counter between the TV room and the kitchen.

“Okay”

She walked me toward the front door. “Are you moving soon?” I asked and nodded toward the boxes.

“Oh...I um haven’t found a place yet, but I have been looking. Most of these boxes are things that will be moved into Demitri’s family storage. I’m not looking at places as large as this one.” She half smiled.

I gave her some neighborhoods to look into and she thanked me before we said our goodbyes.

Once I got home I put the DVD in immediately and sat back on my couch. At first it was dark, but then there was what looked like the ultrasound photo, but with movement. It was a recording the ultrasound and below it said twenty eight weeks. I watched my son flutter and flop, he even kicked a leg. It was the most wonderful thing that I had ever watched. Next was footage of an

extremely large Bella who was sitting in bed with the caption 'third week of bed rest'. Bella had been on bed rest? I could hear Demitri asking her questions as she sat there rolling her eyes at him and laughing. That should have been me. I felt the tears come again. By the end of the DVD I was a blubbing mess on my couch; having seen Anthony immediately after he had been born and was in Bella's arms, him in Demitri's arms, his first months at home, and even Bella breast feeding him. That image made me long for her even more than I already seemed to long for her. I copied the DVD before I returned it and I typically watch it once a day.

After a month and a half of visiting Anthony at his home, Bella decided that it would be okay if I started to take him overnight for a few nights at a time. I was beyond thrilled and Anthony seemed excited, though very nervous. I had Esme decorate my spare room for him; it was all light blue with a sports motif, a racecar bed, and a football shaped toy box.

The first night I couldn't get him to sleep; so Bella ended up coming over to help me with him. She left soon after he was asleep. Seeing her with Anthony, in my home, really made my heart ache and it took everything I had not to force her to stay here with us. Needless to say I fell asleep watching the DVD that night.

Months passed and the arrangement started to take its full affect. I currently had Anthony for the month and Bella would get him one night during the week and on the weekends. Once Bella and Anthony moved into their new home, which was pleasantly only ten minutes from me; she had started working at the label to keep herself busy, since she had more free time now. We even ended up working together a few times; though Aro seemed to do the most interaction with me. I would be lying if I said that I wasn't disappointed.

Tonight was the launch party for 'New Moon', Tanya's band. Cullen Production and Bel Suono, Demitri's well now Bella's label, would all be in attendance. 'New Moon' was already popular on a local market and the branching out was gaining speed. They looked to be a huge success for everyone.

Alice and my mother were watching Anthony at her place in Forks for the weekend, since both Bella and I would need to be in attendance for the party and for whatever meetings were established the next day.

Standing in the large space that Bel Suono had rented out for the night I was amazed at the decorating and all the large screens that were showing videos of 'New Moon' performing as well as a photo slideshow of the group. I was fidgeting with the tie of the black suit that Alice had picked out for me when I felt a hand slide across the top of my shoulders and across the back of my neck. I turned around quickly.

"Tanya" I sighed.

"Edward" she said with a large grin.

"Well it's finally here, you and the band's night" I smiled at her. "Congratulations"

“Thank you” she smiled and winked at me. “You know that none of this would have been possible without you though. You are the best producer out there Edward.” I hadn’t forgotten that her hand was still resting on my shoulder as she moved in closer to my body.

“Tanya” I groaned. “You know that this” I motioned between her and I “is not going to happen.”

She stuck out her bottom lip. “You’re no fun Eddie” I grimaced at the nickname and she giggled. Then she smacked me on the ass as she walked off. I shook my head.

On my way over to get a drink I was completely knocked of my feet, figuratively speaking of course. Bella was standing above a flight of stairs arm wrapped with a large dark haired man. However, what had taken my breath away was that she was wearing a dark blue floor length gown. It looked like it was silk or satin, but the fit was astounding. It was so close to her body without being tight, it was fantastic. I wanted to yank the thin straps away from her shoulders and watch the material slip down her bare skin. I shivered at the thought and licked my lips. The front of the dress was a low-cut V that showed just the swell of her flesh above her breasts. As if that wasn’t enough to make my pants uncomfortable, she turned around. I groaned internally and clenched my eyes shut to gain composure. If I thought the front was a crime the back of the dress was just illegal. Those thin straps crossed her perfect back and the dress had a low V at the base of her back; it was so low that one finger slipped in would place you between the perfect cheeks of her glorious ass.

Luckily Aro stepped in my line of sight and started to discuss ‘New Moon’ and other business. We headed over to the drinks and then settled at a table to talk more.

Not long enough from my last eyeful of her; Bella appeared at the table with the large dark haired man. We stood as he helped her into her seat and then everything went quiet. I was having trouble thinking with her being across from me looking like a goddess in blue satin.

“So, Lucien, are you enjoying the party?” Aro broke the silence.

“Yes. Isabella has been very hospitable” he answered with a thick Italian accent. Who the hell was this guy?

“Lucien this is Edward, he produced ‘New Moons’ CD” Aro added.

“Congratulations on the success” he stuck his hand out and I shook it quickly.

“Thank you.” I turned my eyes onto Bella who was now leaning toward Lucien and talking very animatedly. I wish that she talked to me like that again. We spoke, but it was never with the spirit that I loved about her and it was usually about schedules or Anthony.

When he wrapped his arm around her and leaned into her ear I felt my stomach tighten and my fists clench tightly; my breathing becoming ragged breaths through my nose. Who is this guy, why is he touching her? Touching the mother of MY son, MY Bella? Just as I was about to reach a boiling point a small dark haired woman appeared; drawing my attention away.

“Lucien, Bella, there you are” Bella stood up and the woman kissed each of Bella’s cheeks. Then she leaned down and kissed Lucien on the mouth. I was completely confused now and furrowed my brow.

Bella sat back down and turned to Aro as he spoke. “Maria it is so good to see you again. How is the family?”

“Good, good” she spoke with a thick Italian accent as well.

“Edward” I turned to Aro when he addressed me. “This is Maria; Lucien’s wife and Demitri’s sister.”

“Pleasure to meet you Maria” I took her hand and kissed it over the table, quickly.

“Finally...a gentlemen, other than my husband and Aro, in this god forsaken country” she laughed and Bella laughed with her.

A few hours later I felt the need for fresh air, so I headed to the patio through a set of doors. As I walked out I bumped into Bella, who was on her way back in with her cell phone in her hand.

She raised her phone “Anthony is sleeping. It seems that Alice wore him out.” She smiled and put the phone back in her purse. She excused herself and started to go back inside when I heard a familiar slow song and grabbed her hand. I heard her gasp.

“Dance with me” I stated to her shocked and confused face.

“Um..Edward I don’t think...” I cut her off by pulling her to me closely.

“Good, don’t think about it, just do it” I chuckled lightly as I wrapped my arm around her waist and lifted her other hand and started swaying to the music. A minute passed and she began to move with me.

I pulled her tighter to me and inhaled the scent that could make me fall to my knees. The electricity between us was still there; I could feel it coursing from her to me everywhere our bodies touched. I pulled her even closer, dropping her hand and wrapping the other arm around her waist. “Bella...”

“Don’t Edward” I could hear the cracking in her voice.

“Please let me just...”

“No, I can’t” she tried to pull away.

“Don’t run from me Bella” I lifted her face to me and kissed her easily but passionately. At first she pushed, but then she reciprocated the kiss. As we separated to catch our breath I placed my

lips to her neck, but the doors opened.

“Bella” Aro’s voice rang out and Bella moved away from me quickly.

“Y-yes?” she croaked out.

“Alex would like to meet with us briefly” before he finished she looked at me briefly before heading toward Aro and taking his arm. I watched her go back into the party and I ran my hand through my hair.

What the hell was I doing? Did I really think that Bella and I would be....together again? I was out of my mind. I shook my head and rubbed the back of my neck. Then I covered my face with my hands and lightly rubbed; I could still smell her on my hands. *Ugh!*

I knew exactly what I was doing.

#####

Chapter: 27

Chapter 27 - Please

A/N: Again...awesome reviews!

BPOV

I don’t know what I had been thinking; how could I let that have happened. Things were a mess as it is and kissing each other just made things more complicated. And what was going on with him? Why was he being so....ah! He should be pissed and disgusted with me, not dancing with me and kissing me. Was he crazy?

“Bella?” I had been so lost in my own thoughts that I had missed most of the conversation going on between Alex and Aro.

“Oh, I’m so sorry” I cleared my head and battled for an excuse. “Is it starting to get really warm in here?” I fanned myself.

“Are you feeling okay?” Aro genuinely asked me. I couldn’t tell if he was just playing along with me or if he actually thought I didn’t feel well.

“I’m fine, please continue” I smiled.

The party had been winding down for the past hour; I had said my goodbyes to Lucien and Maria twenty minutes ago and now that I had said goodnight to Aro I headed for my car.

The driver was waiting and opened the door for me when I approached. "Thank you" I smiled while I slid into the car.

As the door shut I looked up in the car. "Edward?!" He smirked. "What are you doing?" I reached for the door handle. He moved quickly to be beside me and grabbed my hand. "Let go, please."

"Not until we are moving." Just then the car pulled away from the curb. He sat back and smiled; taking my other hand.

I pulled my hand away. "What are you doing?"

"I'm doing things that I should have done a long time ago" he smiled and leaned toward me. His lips were temptingly close to mine, but I fought the urges and pushed him back easily. His face fell as he looked at me.

I moved to the other side of the car. "Edward, you need to stop. We need to stop."

"Why?" he leaned toward me again; I put my hands up. If he got too close I knew that I would cave into him.

"You should already know why" I sighed. "What has come over you? Have you lost your mind?" I crossed my arms over my chest and sat back in my seat.

"No, I've only just now come to my senses" he smiled at me.

I huffed.

"Bella, why can't you just..."

"Stop!" I spit out. "Why are you doing this? Things are complicated enough as it is." I groaned out.

He relaxed and sat back in his seat. "I thought that things were getting better" he mumbled.

"Things are 'better' I guess, but what are you thinking kissing me?" I raised my eyebrow.

"You kissed back" he smirked.

"I know I did, but why Edward...it's not good..." he cut me off.

"I wanted to kiss you" his eyes were soft and pleading. "I miss you, a lot."

“Things are different now and too much has happened Edward” I sighed.

“That’s all the past Bella. I don’t like what happened; in fact I hate what you did.” I interrupted him.

“Exactly my point! You should hate me.” I threw my arms up and brought them down on each side of my legs.

“I said I hate what you did, not that I hate you” he growled out.

“How can you not hate me? I hate me for what I caused, and I can’t forgive what I did to you and your family, and especially to Anthony!” I argued.

Quickly he moved from the seat putting his knees on the floor of the car with his hands on either side of my body. I leaned back at his closeness.

“Damn it Bella, please let me forgive you. I don’t want to be angry all the time! Especially not with you.” He was pleading again.

“How can you forgive me for a situation that you only know partly about Edward? I would say that you are fooling yourself into thinking that you forgive me. You can’t possibly.”

“Then tell me” he growled.

“What?” I was confused.

“Tell me why....tell me why you hid the fact that we had a son. What were your reasons Bella?” He looked at me intently.

I swallowed a lump that was building in my throat. “I...I can’t....not right now. Another time.”

He hit the seat on the left of my with his fist; I jumped. “NOW” he spit out at me. I bit my lip and tried to hold the tears back.

I took a deep breath and exhaled before I started. “That night, in the tree house, I was home...because I caught Dimitri with another woman in Italy.” I watched his face contort into confusion. “It had been over a week since I caught him when you found me in the tree house.” I took another breath. “Alice came to get me the morning after, because Dimitri had showed up at my parents.” He looked like he was going to say something, but he closed his mouth and I continued. “We went to have coffee and talk. When I returned Alice said you had left. I assumed that you...that...Oh, I’m not sure what I assumed. I just knew that you had gone. Then you didn’t respond to my attempt to contact you, so I let it all go. I was going to tell you that I told Dimitri.”

“You told him?” he furrowed his brow.

“I told him that I had slept with someone else” I sighed. “When I tried to go into further detail he got upset and didn’t want to hear it. I actually tried multiple times, but he always stopped me and didn’t want to know.” I looked down into my lap where I was twisting my fingers. “After I found out that I was pregnant and how far along I was I tried to tell him again, but he said that if I told him who ‘he’ was then he would kill him.” I felt a tear stream down my cheek. “I’m not trying to make excuses, I swear. I only want you to know what exactly happened. You should hate me and I understand...” his lips cut me off.

Edward’s hands were on each side of my face his tongue swiped my bottom lip wanting me to grant him access to my mouth. I resisted and turned my head. “Edward stop” I panted out.

“Bella...I don’t hate you” he pressed his forehead to mine as he tried to catch his breath. “Yes I was angry and I am still unhappy about it, but like I told you. I don’t want to be angry anymore. I want what we should’ve had from the beginning; before my fuck ups, before your fuckups.”

“Edward, that’s impossible. I still feel and am so guilty for everything...I can’t let you...”

“You aren’t letting me do anything” he argued. “I am telling you what I want. I have never been surer about something in my life.” He sighed and ran his fingers over my collarbone; I could feel each fiery nerve ending blaze at his touch. “I want you, I want you and Anthony.” He looked into my eyes; his green orbs blazing fiercely with passion and longing. “I want to have more children with you.” My breathing hitched at his words and he smirked at me.

I started to pull away from him. He had lost his mind. No one in their right mind would want that after what I had done. He grabbed my arm and held me where I was as he pressed his full body into me and attacked my mouth.

This time he didn’t ask permission he simply thrust his tongue into my mouth as his hands roamed over my body and tightened on my hips. Instinctively I grabbed his shoulders tightly and held onto him.

He felt amazing against me and he tasted better than I had remembered. He tasted sweet and spicy at the same time. I tasted pure Edward. His mouth moved over my jaw and down the front of my neck, slowly licking and sucking down into the low V neck of my dress.

The car stopped abruptly and brought me out of the lust filled haze; Edward continued his ministrations between my breasts as his hand slid up over my left mound and massaged.

“Edward we need to stop” he ignored me. I pushed his shoulders and he pressed into me further. “Edward, Stop!”

“Fuck Bella! Just let go with me...Please!” His head was lying in my lap. I sighed and ran my hands through his hair. At my touch his hands slid to my thighs and squeezed lightly. “Please?” he begged.

“The car stopped” He looked up at me. Anger saturated his features and I tried to push back

further into the seat; for the first time I was scared of Edward.

He yanked the door handle and shoved the door open. Turning his face back to me he spoke “You’re Right! We are here!” he growled loudly. Then he grabbed my arm and pulled me with him out of the car.

“EDWARD!” I screamed at him. I looked back at the car and saw the driver step out quickly and run toward us.

“Sir? Excuse me Sir! I don’t think that...” Edward spun around quickly to him.

“She is staying here tonight.” He looked at me daring me to argue with him. I bit my lip and froze in fear. Without looking back to the driver he spat out “That will be all for this evening. Thank you!”

Edward pulled me along with him toward the elevator and pushed the number for his floor.

“Edward, please stop.” I felt the tears slip over the skin of my cheeks. “You’re scaring me, please...” he snapped around to me quickly. He wasn’t as angry looking, but he was still determined.

Wiping my tears away he looked into my eyes again. “You have nothing to be afraid of Bella.” The elevator doors opened and he grabbed my hand pulling me to his door.

As he unlocked the door I took a step back from him. “Edward I should get home, it’s late.” I tried to speak calmly. He simply wrapped his arm around my waist securely and walked us through the open door, shutting it behind us. The click of the door lock made me jump. “Edward....” He cut me off with his lips again and I pushed away from him.

“Bella please...” he was back to pleading with me.

“Edward, this needs to stop. You need to stop.” He wrapped his arms around me and lifted. I gasped and then protested over and over.

Realizing that we had entered a bedroom I got completely nervous and felt more tears; what was he thinking?!

He laid us down on the bed and curled up beside me; his arm over my stomach and his face in my hair. “Edward?”

“Shhh...please....Bella, just lie here with me.” It wasn’t long until I heard his breathing even out and I shifted out from under his arm.

I stood up and took in a deep breath. Looking back at him as he laid in bed I saw my son’s face. They slept with the same expression; I felt a tear drop down. I rushed to the door, but his hand against the door stopped me before I could open it.

“Bella?”

Without turning around I answered him. “What Edward?”

“I’m sorry that I scared you” he moved his hand from the door. “It wasn’t my intention.”

“I get it. You are still angry with me...that’s why this is not...” he cut me off.

“I am not angry with you...I mean, I am angry that you are so resistant to us” he sighed and sat on his couch. “I just don’t understand. I thought that after all this time you would still love me the way that I have always loved you.”

He looked up when I inhaled sharply at his words and my eyes widened. I saw hope flash in his eyes as he approached me.

“You do?! Don’t you?!” he smiled. “You feel it still...I can’t see it in your face that you do!” His smiled widened and reached his eyes. “You still love me. You are still in love with me...just as I am with you. Aren’t you?!”

I bit my lip; he growled as he stared at my mouth. I dropped my purse out of my hand and this time I attacked his mouth.

My hands instantly went straight to his shoulders and his wrapped around my waist. As our tongues danced in each other’s mouths his hands slid over my ass where he stopped to squeeze roughly, causing me to moan into his mouth.

I fisted his hair as he bent down, never leaving my mouth, and grabbed the back of my thighs. He lifted me up and instinctually I wrapped my legs around his waist; my dress scrunching up to the top of my thighs.

Edward walked us back to his room and placed me back on my feet. Standing next to his bed his mouth moved to my ear and then to my shoulder as his hands pushed the straps of my dress off my shoulders. He took a step back from me and watched as the dress slipped down to my high heeled feet. I watched his eyes darken and he looked back to my face; my breathing was still labored.

“Still so fucking perfect” he growled as he pulled me to him tightly; his lips going straight to the crook of my neck and shoulder. He sat onto the bed; pulling me with him. Rolling over until I was underneath him, his lips never left my skin. I returned to lacing my fingers in his hair, which seemed to instigate his lust.

Quicker than I could comprehend he was between my legs leaning on his elbow that was next to my head. His other hand wandered over my left breast; manipulating the sensitive nipple eagerly. Edward sat back between my legs and pulled me up to him as he reach around me and swiftly removed my bra.

Pushing me back down onto the bed his mouth closed around my hardened nipple and his tongue and teeth worked magic. That flame was still there. With every touch he placed on my body the flame grew and spread. As I arched my back at his ministrations on my breast I felt his fingers loop into my lace panties; however, instead of pulling them down, he tore them from my body. I didn't realize how much hotter he could make me until he did that.

I ripped his white button up shirt open and he shook it off of his body. While he pulled his t-shirt off of his body I was busily unbuckling and unbuttoning his pants. He stood up hastily and shoved them to the floor with his boxers.

When he returned between my legs and I felt his bare skin against mine I groaned at the immense pleasure from just the feel of him so close to me. The anticipation was getting to be too much and as he shifted over me he removed his mouth from my neck and looked into my eyes. I pulled on his shoulder until he was close enough that I could thrust my tongue into his mouth.

Pulling away gasping with his hard cock teasing my bare folds he huskily asked me one question "Are you protected?" At first it didn't register, but then I knew what he was asking. I shook my head and groan out "No. Do you have...?" Before I could finish he thrust forcefully into my hot wet center. I instantly panted and moaned "Ohhhh Goodddd!"

My hands went back to his shoulders where I sunk my fingers into his skin roughly. I had forgotten how good he felt. He didn't move for a few moments, but I couldn't stand it and I pressed my hips upward. He moaned loudly and began to drive in and out of me; slowly and then increasingly faster.

In a matter of minutes he had me screaming his name and fisting large amounts his hair roughly. He drove into me faster and faster and I felt the hot coil in my stomach start to build tension again. As it tightened the flame turned into a fire. When his fingers worked my clit the fire became a full body explosion.

"Fffuckkk Edward!" I screamed.

He rolled us over, his hardness still buried inside of me, so that I was straddling him. I started to rock on his hips as his hands roamed up over my breasts. He rolled my nipples in his fingers making me rock faster. Edward sat up so that his bare chest was against my bare skin and his mouth was in perfect alignment with my breasts. With his hands tightly around my waist he helped guide me up and down on him while sucking and nipping at my extremely sensitive nipples.

When his hands grabbed my ass tightly I knew that he was close and I began to work his cock harder and faster. He pressed his forehead to my chest and moaned loudly.

"Bellllahhh...I'm...FUCK!" I felt his body shudder under me and I continued to ride out his release. He gently bit my neck and groaned as I rocked steadily on him, until he pulled me down to the bed with him; both of us falling asleep.

EPOV

When she grew silent and bit that lip I knew that she still felt the same way I did. I did not expect her to launch her attack on me; not that I was complaining.

The feel of her mouth on mine, her tongue against mine, and those legs of hers wrapped around my waist again. It was pure fucking heaven! The taste of Bella's mouth was as perfect as it always had been and watching my fantasy of that dress sliding down her bare skin was utter bliss; I could've come at the sight, but holding off until she had come undone under my touch a couple of times was much better.

Watching her sleep next to me felt like I was still dreaming and I feared that I would wake from this, so I reached out and placed my hand on her face; she was real. It was all real; it had happened. I wasn't sure how she would react this morning, but for now I could just watch her sleep peacefully.

After watching her for twenty minutes I had to drag myself away from her so that I could head to the kitchen to make coffee. While it was brewing I decided to throw a few things together. I went to the fridge and found some English muffins; I toasted them. After buttering them I looked for jelly or jam, and when I saw strawberry jam I knew there was no other flavor more perfect to lick from her lips later. I poured the coffee, threw some fruit I cut up onto a plate, and added the muffins to a tray.

Bella was slowly starting to stir in my bed. I stood still for a moment absorbing the sight of her wrapped in the light blue sheet of my bed. I sighed and continued to the bed. I set the tray down on my dresser and climbed onto the bed next to her. She stirred again, rolled over exposing one of her breasts, and I groaned at the sight. Her eyes fluttered open.

"Good morning beautiful" I kissed her forehead.

She stretched and then her eyes opened wide and large. *Shit, here we go.* She sat up and the sheet fell to her waist exposing her whole bare chest. *Fuck, she's trying to kill me! I may explode at the sight of her, ugh. As if morning wood wasn't bad enough, she just intensified it.*

When she realized where my eyes were she quickly covered herself and blushed bright crimson. *That just made me want to pile drive into her; fuck she is walking sex!*

"You okay?" I asked as I watched a hundred different emotions flash across her face.

"Umm...I don't know" she said in a small voice.

I reached up to her and pulled her down to me; she was a little hesitant but complied with my actions.

"Oh fuck!" she exclaimed and buried her head into my side.

“What?” I chuckled.

“Edward...umm...you didn’t use a condom did you?” she asked with her head still buried in my side.

“No” I answered simply.

“Uhhgghhhh...” she rolled away and buried her head in a pillow. I furrowed my brow.

“What?” I asked in a short tone.

“I’m not on birth control Edward. I told you that last night, but I don’t think that...”

“I heard you” My answer was honest.

“You what?!” her head shot up from the pillow and her eyes were narrowed on my face.

“I just...well...I didn’t want to stop” I shrugged.

“You don’t have..”

I chuckled lightly. “I haven’t exactly been bringing women home with me Bella, so no I don’t have condoms lying around; at least not that I am aware of.”

She groaned again and went back to burying her head in the pillow. I stood and got the breakfast tray.

“Hungry?” I sat the tray down on the bed in front of me.

I heard a muffled “no” and laughed.

“Will you stop worrying please? It’s not like I would care if...”

“If what Edward?!” She was in a sitting position quickly with the sheet wrapped around her body. “If I end up pregnant?! Even though at this point we don’t even know what we are anymore!”

I felt the tension in my shoulders. “I was pretty clear about what I wanted last night” I spit out.

“Edward...” she rubbed her face with her hand as she groaned out my name.

“What Bella?” I was getting frustrated with her now. “I told you that I want you, I want us...I want what we should’ve been!” I knew I was getting louder, but I didn’t care.

“Yeah well you also said you wanted me to have more children and then you have unprotected

sex with me! Do you think if I get pregnant now that it would be a good thing?” She was shouting back now.

“Damn it Bella...I wasn’t ‘trying’ to get you pregnant! I was carried away in the moment with you!” I ran my hand through my hair. “Fuck! You know what I want. What do you want?”

She grew silent and I didn’t like it. “I don’t know” she whispered.

I threw the tray off the bed. I saw her jump at my action and immediately regretted it when I saw the fear that plagued her perfect face.

“I’m sorry” I said in a hushed tone. “I just...Bella I want us. Please tell me that you want to try ‘us’ again. Please?” I crawled over to her and she flinched away. I almost cried at her being frightened of me. I sighed and hung my head in defeat.

Then I felt her hands on the side of my face. I looked up quickly and her face was full of uncertainty and compassion. She pulled my face forward and pressed her lips to mine.

“Please Bella?” I moved closer to her and wrapped my arms around her tightly laying my head on her shoulder.

She encompassed my body with her arms and placed one hand on my head. “Okay” she whispered. “We...” I didn’t let her finish I had her pressed to the mattress and my lips molesting her mouth.

When she pulled her lips from mine I continued my attack, but moved it to her neck.

“Edward...” she panted. “We will try, okay?” I nodded eagerly against her body as I tasted her skin.

She moaned in enjoyment of my exploits of her skin. I pulled the sheet from her body and continued my lip assault down her chest, between her breasts, and over her stomach. I could already smell how aroused she was as I pushed her legs apart and sucked on her inner thigh.

Her hand gripped into my hair and she pushed her hips forward. “Oh God, Edward, please” she begged. I knew what she wanted and I was more than happy to provide it.

I slid my tongue over her wet folds and she moaned as her grip tightened in my hair; holding my head to her. I massaged her swollen clit with my tongue and she started rocking her hips toward my mouth.

Sliding two fingers into her center while I continued my actions with my tongue she began to rock faster into my fingers; groaning and moaning. A few pumps of my fingers and I felt her walls clench around my fingers; my dick instantly throbbed painfully in my boxers at the feel of her release.

I removed my fingers and brought them to my mouth as I climbed up her body. I pulled my aching hard cock out of my boxers and slid into her; bringing my knees up behind her thighs. My hands grabbed behind her knees and I began to pump over and over, harder and harder.

Her head thrashed back and forth, her body writhed, her tits bounced around, and her hands fisted the sheets as she moaned and grunted. I was panting and moaning heavily as I got deeper into her.

When her pussy clenched my cock the same way that it had my fingers I felt my release explode throughout my body in a wave of heat and pleasure. I collapsed on top of her trying to catch my breath.

“Jesus Edward...” she panted and I chuckled breathlessly.

She was finally mine again, as she was supposed to be.

After cleaning up the mess I had made, I went back to the kitchen and made more coffee while Bella showered. I was pouring the coffee when she walked into the kitchen in one of my t-shirts; it was definitely too big for her, but it was still short enough that if she were to lean slightly I would get a glorious peek at her. I smiled at the thought.

“What?” She cocked her head to the side a little as she was sipping her coffee.

“Nothing” I shrugged. She eyed me and she completely didn’t buy it, but she let it go.

“I’m going to jump in the shower. I’ll be right back.” I kissed the side of her head and went to my bathroom.

After I was finished and dried off, I threw on boxers, a pair of jeans, and a t-shirt. When I got back to the living room Bella was in her dress from last night and her purse and shoes were sitting on one of my barstools.

She looked over to me while she was drinking a glass of water. I raised an eyebrow at her as I looked her over. She put the glass in the sink and turned back to me.

“I have to get going” she said while walking around toward her things.

I grabbed her purse before she could get to it. “Edward...” she whined. “I have some phone calls to make and a meeting.” She reached for her purse, but I pulled it away smirking. “Come on.”

“Stay” I leaned my body into hers pinning her back against the kitchen island.

“I can’t” she said in a hushed tone.

I stuck my bottom lip out “come on, stay.”

She quickly grabbed her purse from my hand. "I can't" she said sternly and then went for her shoes.

I was about to grab her when there was a knock at my door. "Who the hell...?"

"That would be the car I called for while you were in the shower" she smirked at me. *Well played Bella, well played.*

Pulling back the door a man in a black suit stood staring back at me; the driver. Bella came up from behind me and the driver acknowledged her. "Mrs. Fiorello are you ready ma'am?" My brow furrowed at the use of 'that' last name.

"Yes Donald, thank you" she smiled graciously at him and then turned to me. "Bye" she leaned up and kissed me quickly.

Before she could get her heels back on the floor I grabbed her waist "Oh no you don't" I held her chin and crushed my lips to hers; delivering a kiss that I hoped she would think about all day.

"I'm picking up Anthony later this evening. Come with me?" I asked as I allowed her to pull away from my embrace.

"You mean from your family?" I saw her instantly tense up and she bit her lip. *Excuse me Donald, could you please wait in the car while I fuck Bella against this door?* "With Esme?"

I nodded "It will be fine. I promise that they will be on their best behavior."

"I don't think so" I tried to interrupt her, but she stopped me. "I think it is way too early for that, for this to be something we talk about outside of us."

My face fell and she definitely noticed. "Why?!"

"You know why" she argued.

"NO, I don't. I want to shout from the rooftops that I have you back, where you will stay if I might add" I smiled crookedly at her.

"Oh you think so?" she smirked.

"Mm Hm...baby you are never going anywhere ever again. I may not be the smartest man, but I will not make that mistake again" I raised an eyebrow at her and she laughed lightly as she leaned in to kiss me quickly. "Come on, I'll call your father and tell him that we will be down this evening and we can eat dinner at my parents. Together, as a family, the way it should be."

She looked at me nervously while she contemplated and then nodded hesitantly in agreement. I smiled largely and finally let her go; though it killed me for her to not be close to me.

After I did a couple of hours of work from my home office I called Alice to let her know about dinner. She didn't answer, so I left her a voicemail. Then I called my mother.

"Hey baby" she answered.

"Good afternoon Mom" I smiled.

"You sound very good" she lightly chuckled. "Did you have a good night?"

"Yeah, you could say that" I laugh quietly and rubbed the back of my head. "How is Anthony? Did he do okay?"

"Yes, he did very well. He is so smart Edward, so much like you at that age." I could hear the smile in her voice.

"I'm glad he was good for you." I cleared my throat quietly. "Hey listen I was thinking that we should have dinner at your house tonight; you know, Alice & Jasper, Rose, Em, & the kids, Sue & Charlie, Bella & me. What do you think?"

"Oh, that sounds lovely, though I don't know about Charl....wait! You and who?!?!?" *Shit...not the reaction I was hoping for.* "Please tell me that she hasn't worked her way back into your life anymore than she already has to be!"

"Mom, please..." she cut me off.

"Edward Anthony are you crazy?"

"Funny that's the same thing that Bella said to me last night" I chuckled; she didn't find it humorous.

"Last night?" I heard her take some breaths. "Honest to God Edward! I don't know what to say to you. After everything she put you and this family through, how on earth can you...?" I cut her off.

"Exactly mom, I can forgive her just as she forgave me for leaving her and ignoring her; just as I can finally say that I am the happiest that I have been in...well in forever!" I sighed and pinched my nose. "This is what I have wanted for so long and since she is willing to agree to be with me again then I am taking it and running with it. I need you to please be supportive and accept that I am in love with Bella, I always have been, and always will be."

I heard her sigh heavily. "Edward..."

"Mother..." I countered.

She exhaled. "Fine, but I don't have to like or accept it Edward."

“I would appreciate it if you would at least try to be understanding.”

“Edward...”

“Yes” *Was she going to agree and really just try to see how happy this made me.*

“Stop and get some red wine on your way here” then she hung up.

I exhaled deeply and suddenly had a feeling that this may not go as well as I hoped.

A/N: Okay, next chapter....A LOT MORE ESME ACTION!! WHOO HOO!!! LOL LOL

There have been a lot of comments about her behavior, but don't worry...things will be addressed.

I'll just say this....Esme, Sue, Charlie, and Carlisle all in the same house...with everyone. Imagine the possibilities!!! :o) I know I have!! And I have written them! Hee Hee

#####

Chapter: 28

Chapter 28 – Tell Me How You Really Feel

A/N: Here we go....prepare for the GRANDMAMA DRAMA.....Esme....here she comes.

BPOV

I knew that this was going to be a tough night and when I questioned myself as to why I even agreed to this I knew the answer immediately; Edward. He wanted me to for him.

When I arrived to Edward's apartment he was ready to go and we headed down to his car. Both of us were silent for about twenty minutes until Edward broke the silence.

“Bella?”

“Hmm?”

“Are you okay?”

I sighed. “No, not really” I shrugged. “I know this going to end badly Edward.”

“Non-sense. It will be trying, I’m sure, but it will all work out” he sounded like he was trying to convince himself more than me.

We went back to being silent again for a few moments. “Can I ask you about something?” he glanced at me quickly then back to the road.

“Of course” I responded; searching his face.

“I would like for you to sign papers to change Anthony’s last name to Cullen” his eyes stayed straight on the road.

“Okay” I answered quietly.

“Really?” he sounded shocked.

“Edward, why would I argue that?” I threw my hands up at him.

“I don’t know. I just wasn’t sure what your reaction would be.” He shrugged and I started to look straight ahead when his next question popped out quickly. “Um...have you considered changing your name? I mean back to Swan?”

I returned my gaze to him quickly searching his face again; he was serious. “Uh..no I hadn’t thought about it.” I answered honestly and his face fell. “Edward...” he cut me off.

“It’s fine” he grumbled out and I could tell that it was time to end that conversation.

We arrived to Forks and Edward drove straight to his parent’s house. When we arrived Esme was at the door holding Anthony as we climbed out of the car. Anthony wiggled in Esme’s arms until she put him down.

“Momma!” he ran straight into my arms and I squeezed him tightly. It felt so good to hold him.

Edward came up behind us and ruffled Anthony’s hair. “He little buddy” Edward acknowledged.

“Daddy!” he reached for Edward. I let Anthony go and as I turned I caught Esme’s cold glare at me. *This was going to be sooo bad.*

Esme had stayed in the kitchen which I am sure was to avoid being around me. Charlie and Sue arrived soon after we got there and I was thankfully for their presence.

“Bella” Sue sang and she wrapped her arms around me.

“Hey baby” Charlie leaned in and kissed my forehead.

The three of us sat together on the couch and talked as Anthony entertained Edward and Carlisle with his new doctor exam kit that Carlisle had bought for him.

“Bells are you sure that this is a good idea” Charlie asked in a very hushed tone.

“No, I’m not” I hushed back. Sue put her hand on my knee and squeezed.

Alice and Jasper, Em, Rose, and the kids arrived about ten minutes after Charlie and Sue. Things were feeling good until Esme returned.

“Dinner is ready” she said with a plastered smile.

Everyone filtered into the dining room to eat. There was a small table set up for Bree and Anthony who were laughing and giggling together; I smiled at them.

Dinner was pretty quiet for the most part with general conversation taking place. Carlisle talked about the hospital, Esme discussed a charity event that she was helping with, and then Alice was talking about her new fashion line that she was working on.

Leave it to Emmett to get the evening moving. “So, are you guys like officially back together now?” he used his fork to motion back and forth between us.

I blushed and then as Edward was about to speak I heard Esme snort. All eyes went to her.

“Esme...” Carlisle was using a very warning tone.

“What? I didn’t say anything.” She smirked in my direction.

“Esme please, let’s just try to...”

“Sure” she took another sip of her wine. “Lets just try to understand how this” she motioned between Edward and I. “Is actually going to work.” She paused. “After SHE” she pointed sternly in my direction “has caused such a mess in our lives.”

“Mother...” Alice hissed and then looked to me apologetically.

Esme downed the last of her wine. “Alice, you of all people should be agreeing with me right now. Hell she practically destroyed you and Edward’s relationship.”

I felt the tears but refused to let them come out; I deserved what she was saying, but at the same time, this wasn’t the way to do it.

I saw Rose stand quickly. “Well since someone is letting alcohol get the best of her mouth, I am going to take the kids next door with me.” She threw her napkin down on the table roughly and rounded up the kids with Emmett right behind her.

“Mom can you please try to understand the entire situation?” Edward’s fist hit the table and I put my hand on his fist in an attempt to calm him.

“Edward how could you be with this lying selfish bitch after....”

“OKAY THAT IS ENOUGH!” All of our head snapped at Sue had just tossed her napkin on the table and stood. “I have had it! Yes Bella made a huge mistake and yes she was completely wrong, and NO I do not understand how they can be together right now, but DAMN IT ESME I will NOT let you sit there half intoxicated and insult my daughter any longer! It’s enough! This is for them to work out; not you!” Charlie stood quickly and put his hand on Sue’s shoulder trying to coax her to leave with him. Sue shrugged off his hand. “NO Charlie, it’s time that Esme got off her high horse! We all know that she has made her own mistakes and yet none of us EVER sat and persecuted her!” I watched Sue’s eyes flash knowingly at Esme.

“Don’t you dare...” Esme shot up from her chair; slamming her hands onto the table.

“Okay....okay...let’s just all relax please” Carlisle stood with Esme now and I put my head in my hands as I leaned my elbows onto the table. I felt Edward rub my back. “Maybe it is time for everyone to go...” Esme wasn’t finished.

She was staring at Edward and me. “Don’t comfort her!” Edward’s eyes turned on his mother.

“You have completely crossed the line Mom...I asked you...”

“OH NO!!! I have things to ask...plenty of things Bella!” I looked up at her and glared.

“FINE!” I screamed and now I was on my feet. “Ask away Esme!”

She smirked evilly and as she opened her mouth “Esme...please just stop this now before it goes any further” Carlisle pleaded and put an arm over her shoulder.

She pushed him off quickly.

“Why did you choose Anthony for his name? Was it a sick joke to you?!”

“I was being selfish again. I felt like it was the one thing that I could give Edward.” Esme’s expression became more saturated with hate.

“The one thing that you could give HIM?! Are you serious?” I flinched slightly. “You could have given Edward HIS son Bella.”

“You know what Esme, it was, it is very complicated and I feel guilty I really do. I know that that isn’t enough...”

“Damn right it isn’t enough!” She shouted.

Sue slammed her hand on the table. “ESME!” we all snapped our attention back to her now.

“You damn well know that you have made huge mistakes, yet you were forgiven! Do not make

me call you out on being a hypocrite!”

“I am not a hypocrite!” she yelled.

I watched as Carlisle’s face became pained and he slinked back into his chair mumbling “Esme I told you to stop.”

I heard Charlie huff loudly and try to pull Sue away. Once again she shrugged him off; he gave up and sat down with his hands running through his hair.

“Oh you aren’t huh?” Sue walked around the table and met Esme face to face.

“Sue you keep your mouth shut” I saw fear flash across Esme’s face.

I looked down to Alice who was twisted in her chair with tears streaming down her face.

“MOM!!” Edward shouted. “Just stop it. We are leaving! Bella let’s...”

“SHE can leave anytime she wants to! No one is keeping her here!” Her eyes looked like they could shoot flames through me.

“Let’s talk about two years after you moved here Esme! Let’s talk about Elizabeth!” I looked around and saw confusion on everyone’s face; except Charlie, Carlisle, Sue, and Esme. Esme looked shocked and hurt.

“Stay out of things that you don’t...” Sue cut her off.

“Or let’s talk about the baby!” Sue shot out again. “Except, instead of having her having it, you ‘got rid of it’!” Sue spit the words out with venom.

“Fuck you Sue!” Esme shouted and tossed someone’s glass of wine in her face. Charlie and Carlisle got to them before they could touch each other, though the profanities that were flowing freely from their lips had me in shock.

Then Sue’s words seemed to register. “Elizabeth?” Edward groaned. “Wasn’t that they woman that used to work with...” Edward stood with hatred in his eyes. “And then she was gone...” He couldn’t finish.

“Edward...” Esme looked pained.

“I think we should just call the Kettle Black and then go about our lives!” Sue shouted as Charlie forcefully but lovingly pulled her from the room. I was still shocked by Sue’s protective nature.

“Mother?” Alice whimpered.

Esme wiggled from Carlisle’s grasp and went to Alice pulling her into a hug. Esme started to

bawl her eyes out and latch on to Alice.

“Fuck!” Edward yelled. “So you got Elizabeth pregnant and then you...you...” Edward looked to Carlisle. “And you knew about this?” He looked at his mother.

Carlisle sighed and leaned forward on the table. “Edward, your mother and I...” he took a deep breath before exhaling loudly. “Your mother and I were separated for about a year. Not that you or your sister would have really noticed. I was always at the hospital, because of my schedule anyhow, so it wasn’t such a shock that I wasn’t home much. I mostly slept at the hospital, in a guest room, and...well and at another woman’s place.” He rubbed his forehead. “We were separated and were living our own lives, so it wasn’t technically cheating by either of us. We were both well aware that the other was ‘with’ someone else at some point.” He sighed and ran his hand through his hair again.

“You have an open marriage?” Alice leaned out of her mother’s shoulder; tears still predominant. Jasper was rubbing her back and being the only silent body in the house.

“No” Carlisle whispered out raggedly. “Like I said we ‘were’ separated.”

“What about the baby?!” Edward spit out.

“A month after we had resolved some of our issues and decided to work harder on our marriage the woman I had been with found out she was pregnant.” Carlisle looked at Esme who buried her face in Alice’s shoulder. “I told your mother who forgave me, but...she didn’t want the baby” He couldn’t finish. “Anyhow she decided to terminate the pregnancy.” He stopped and it took everyone what felt like an hour to regain their composure.

Edward broke the silence. “You have the nerve to criticize and...”

“Edward!” I shouted at him putting a hand on his arm. He looked to me confused. “That’s enough.” I looked at Esme who pulled away from Alice with swollen red eyes. “Everyone makes mistakes and your mother loves you. She only wants what is best for you.” I dropped my napkin onto my chair and headed toward the front door.

“Bella!” Edward caught up to me. “Please don’t leave, stay with me.”

“Edward I will be next door. I don’t think that me being here is such a good idea.” I smiled weakly and left. I heard a loud thud after the door closed behind me, but I refused to find out what it was.

EPOV

“Edward!?” Alice shouted at me. Carlisle appeared next to me and was examining my hand that I had just slammed into the wall.

“I’m fine” I spit out. I stormed over to my mother and looked down at her. “I hope you are happy

now!” She reached for me and I swiftly ran out the back door.

I knew where I was going, I was going to Bella. There was no way that I was going to let this break us.

“Edward!” I turned and saw my mother, broken, and standing at the back door.

“What?” I groaned toward her, but not getting closer to her.

“I’m sorry” she whispered.

“I’m sure you are” I whispered back and went to Charlie and Sue’s house.

I got to their house and saw Bella sitting in a chair in the back yard. I immediately walked over to her.

“You should be with your mother Edward” she spoke without looking at me.

“No, I should be with you” I closed the gap and kneeled in front of her.

“Edward we need to talk” I felt a knot in my stomach. *This was going to be bad.*

“Please Bella, we’ve already talked” she shook her head.

“No Edward we haven’t” she took a deep breath. “Why did you ignore me? What did I do to push you away?” She still wouldn’t look at me.

“I... You didn’t do anything. I just thought that it would be better to...but I was wrong. I was so jealous of the thought of you with someone else that I figured if I just let you go it would be better.”

“Why did you get engaged so quickly?”

“I felt like I needed, that I had to have someone with me Bella. I hated being alone, especially after I no longer had you.” I took a deep breath. “Glenda was great and she was what I thought that I wanted, and then I realized that she was what I could ‘live’ with, but then she realized that she couldn’t live with me.”

“And you don’t think that that is what this is now...your need to be with someone so you aren’t lonely?”

“Oh god Bella No! Since Glenda and I got divorced I have barely dated; there were an occasional dates or small short lived relationship, but I realized my dependencies awhile ago. I’ve done a lot to stop being that way.” I lifted her chin to look at me. “We are because it is what I have always wanted.” She tried to smile, but it didn’t really reach her eyes.

She took a deep breath. “Well?”

“Well what?” I asked.

“Your turn” she said a little uneasy.

“Oh” I stood and sat in the chair next to her.

I took a deep breath and then I followed her example.

“Did you meet Demitri at my engagement party?” She nodded and I sighed. “I knew it. I’ve fucked up more than one way huh?”

“Why Bella...why didn’t you tell me? I want to really truly understand what would stop you from tell me that we were going to have a child.” I kept my eyes to the ground. I know she had told me things the night before, but it didn’t seem like it was all of it.

I heard her breath heavily. “It was the easy out Edward” I heard her choke on a sob. “I was a coward, I was selfish, and I went with what was easier. I had already failed you and I felt like if I didn’t make my marriage work then I was failing everyone else too. I never thought...I didn’t take into account what would result.” I could hear her snuffle. “I knew then that Demitri was the closest I would get to feeling....” she paused “to feeling the way that I had felt with you.” Then I heard a hard sob from her.

“Bella, you should’ve talked to me. Hunted me down...came to my door...something. Something other than leave me in the dark.”

“I know and I am...” I cut her off.

“Bella I don’t want any more apologies, okay?” I looked over and she was nodding.

“I was so mad at you.” She whispered.

“You were....”

“Yes, because you were engaged and I still felt...felt this way about you. You had moved on; I hated it.” She admitted.

“You hid it well” I chuckled and she stayed silent. I reached over and grabbed her hand. “Bella?”

“Hmm?”

“Please tell me that we aren’t ending us already” I felt her squeeze my hand and I took that as reassurance. After a few moments Bella moved and she climbed into my lap. I rested back into the chair and she leaned her head onto my shoulder. We lay there for at least an hour before we said another word.

“Edward?”

“Hmm?”

“I still love you” My heart thumped and I wound my arms around her tightly.

“Bella I have always loved you” I whispered into her ear and she shivered. I smiled and kissed behind her ear.

“You need to talk to your mom and make it better” her words caught me off guard and I tensed. “She loves you and was simply trying to protect you. Go to her.”

“But what about...?” She cut me off.

“Anthony and I will stay in my room over here. We will see you in the morning, which isn’t too far away with how late it is now” she giggled lightly. “Now got make things better with your family.” She patted my leg and stood to go inside.

I grabbed her arm as she went toward the house; spinning her around. I leaned in and kissed her deeply. I hoped that how I felt about her poured from me into her; however, what surprised me was that the kiss seemed to turn into her love pouring into me. I felt my heart swell and my stomach warm from her intensity.

Saying one more quick goodnight I headed back to my parent’s home.

When I entered the door and walked into the house I found my father sitting at the dining room table; which had been cleared. There was a clear bottle of brown liquor and an empty glass with ice sitting in front of him. His head was in his hands.

“Dad?”

He obviously hadn’t seen or heard me come in because he jumped. “Oh Edward” he chuckled. “You frightened me.”

“Sorry about that” I paused and then I moved closer to him. “I’m sorry about tonight” I put my head down.

“My boy, you have nothing to be sorry for, it was all going to happen eventually” he tried to blow it all off, but I could tell that he was still working through the events. “Just go easy on your mother. She only wants what is best for you and for Anthony.”

“Bella is what is best for both of us” I growled out. “Where is she?”

“She is in our room with Alice” he mumbled.

When I got to my parent's room I could overhear a conversation between Alice and our mother.

"He hate's me Al...do you hate me too?" I could hear the tears in her voice.

"No mom, I don't hate you and neither does Edward. He was just angry. I mean...tonight was a lot to take in." Alice comforted her.

"No, no...he hates me. Sue is right, I'm a hypocrite. I just want what is best for both of you."

"We know, we know...now shhh.." Alice soothed.

"He's not going to talk to me again" my mother sobbed.

I knocked lightly and then opened the door.

"Edward?" she croaked out.

"Yes mom, it's me."

"Oh baby I am so sorry for what happened tonight I just...I only want..." I cut her off.

"I still am not sure if I forgive you for what happened tonight, especially after hearing what happened in the past with you and dad and then you tried to judge Bella and me..." I stopped myself when I saw the hurt on her face. I sighed. "I love you mom. I really do, but I am a grown man. You need to let me decide what I want and I know what I want; whether you like it or not."

"I understand" her head was down. "I still don't like that you and..." I cut her off again.

"Be careful what you say about her mom, because she is the only reason that I am standing in front of you right now." I informed her and both my mom and Alice looked confused. "She, Bella, is the one who told me, no made me, come back over here and talk to you. She knows that you only love me and were trying to protect me. I just wish that you could be as understanding as she is being right now."

"Edward..."

"I think we should just drop the subject and move on mother" I said shortly. She started to cry harder and I went over to the bed and sat next to her; placing my arm around her.

Once she had cried herself to sleep and my father had shown up I excused myself and went to my room. I showered and put on pajamas. Climbing into bed I felt the same longing that I had always felt when she was apart from me.

I snuck to Alice's room quietly and as I was climbing onto the tree house walkway I heard Al groan. "Shut the door Edward!" I chuckled and pulled the door tightly closed then continued my path.

When I got to the doors on her balcony they were unlocked. I entered quietly and closed the door. As I got closer I could make out Bella's figure and then Anthony's. He was curled up to her chest and she had her arm around him. That was when I made a very final decision.

Anthony's name would be changed, but soon I would change Bella's name too. We would have a family and I would ask her to carry my child for me again.

My smile never faltered as I slipped in next to her warm body and wrapped my arm over her; resting my hand on our son.

A/N: Okay so I already had this chapter written and since I got it edited quickly I figured I would post it for you guys. Hope that you liked the dinner battle as much as I enjoyed writing it.

Probably won't update again till Monday. I have started working on my new story and I owe 'Opener vs Headliner' an update before I get strung up for the cliffie I left them with.

Thanks for reading.

#####

Chapter: 29

Chapter 29 - Unions

BPOV

The weeks following that night at Edward's parents were rough and unusual at first. Esme was constantly calling Edward for reassurance that things were okay with her and him. Alice and Edward had come to a complete resolution of his anger with her and with the new information they had learned about their parents.

Sue and I had become closer since that night. The way Sue had stood up to Esme really made me look at her as a mother instead of a step-mother.

Anthony was too young to register too much except that his momma and daddy were together a lot more. There was a moment that I thought that our night without precautions might have gotten me pregnant; however, much to my relief I was not pregnant.

A month after that night Esme had called me at work and left a message with my secretary. When I had finally gotten the nerve to call her back she asked me if I would meet her for lunch

the next day in Seattle. I reluctantly agreed, but figured that at least it was a public place; she couldn't kill me right?

Our lunch date arrived sooner than I had prepared myself for, but I climbed out of my car and headed into the restaurant. Esme was sitting off in the corner and the hostess led me directly to her. She smiled uneasily as I arrived and I knew my smile was just as uneasy.

"Hello" I said quietly.

"Thank you for meeting with me" she looked nervous.

"Sure" At that moment the waitress arrived to take our drink order. Once she was gone it remained silent.

"Umm, I'm not sure why you wanted to..." Esme cut me off.

"First, I need to apologize for my behavior" the waitress returned and we quickly ordered our lunches. When she had left again Esme continued. "I am sorry for the way that I have treated..."

"It's okay" I barely spit out. "Esme, I know you were, are, mad at me for what I did and I am truly sorry for everything. I really am! I don't know what else I can say, but if you just tell me then I will say it."

"Bella, all I ask is that you don't hurt my son" she got extremely serious. "You were always like a daughter to me and you didn't deserve for me to turn on you the way that I did. I was reliving my past and trying to protect my son, but it wasn't handled properly. I am sorry." She cleared her throat lightly. "Edward has forgiven you and so I have forgiven as well. Could you possibly forgive me?"

I nodded and the waitress appeared with our food. Over lunch we discussed a few things, some details, and I told her that I would get some of Anthony's pictures and videos for her.

When I got home that evening I was met by Anthony and Edward in my living room.

"So how did it go?" he asked with a nervous expression.

"It was good" I smiled easily. "I promised to get her some copies of the photos and videos like I did for you." I picked up Anthony and hugged him tightly.

"I can give her mine" he said in a low tone.

"What? No, those are yours. I can get..." he put his hand on my knee and cut me off.

"Bella, I don't want copies. I want the real thing" he didn't look at me.

"I don't think I understand" I whispered out. Anthony climbed off my lap and went back to his

crayons on the floor in front of where Edward and I sat.

“I don’t want to not be together, as a family. You have copies here and I want to be where you and Anthony are” he finally looked up at me.

“You want to move in with us?” I asked a little shocked at the request.

His face looked defeated “If you don’t want...”

“Oh god Edward! Of course I do!” I wrapped my arms around him and tackled him back onto the couch. I heard Anthony giggle and then felt him climb up onto my back and lay on us.

“Really? Cause it sounded for a minute like...”

I kissed him. “When are you moving in?” I smiled widely at him and he kissed me forcefully.

After eating dinner together and putting Anthony to bed Edward and I sat and discussed his move into my house, our house. We talked about the good and the bad, if it was too early for this step, and then we talked about the financial parts.

It was late when we finally climbed the stairs to bed. We both fell asleep almost immediately after getting into bed.

No more custody agreement, no more deciding who’s place to spend the night at, no more being apart. I couldn’t have been happier.

A few months later Alice and Jasper announced that they were expecting a baby. Everyone was elated and the baby shower planning was taking off months in advance.

Esme and Sue had reconciled their relationship slowly after my lunch with her. Esme was trying to make amends for her behavior and everyone was working to get past all of the drama.

Edward moved in two months after we discussed it and Esme received all the copies of baby books, photos, and videos that Edward had. All of mine were now ours.

By Father’s day Anthony’s name had been officially changed to Anthony Charles Cullen and I surprised Edward by showing up at his company one afternoon with the news.

Entering the building I was greeted by the receptionist Kate.

“Good morning Bella” she smiled. “He is in his office I believe.”

“Thanks” I smiled largely. I quickly got to the elevator and impatiently tapped my foot. Once the doors opened I sprang onto the floor and headed to his office door. Charlotte was sitting outside of the door at her desk and was smiling as I approached. “Is he busy?”

“Never for you” she smirked and buzzed into his office. “Mr. Cullen?”

“Yes, Charlotte” he sounded a little irritated.

“You have a visitor can I send them in?” she stifled a giggle.

“Does the visitor have a name?” he asked more annoyed.

I leaned to the phone “Just let your ‘baby mamma’ in the damn office Edward!” Charlotte busted into a fit of giggles and I laughed.

“Oh dear God” I heard him laugh, but then it grew silent.

I looked at Charlotte and she shrugged “Mr. Cul..?” Before she could finish his office door swung open and he grabbed me around the waist.

“Hold any calls” he winked and I slapped his chest for making the insinuation. He laughed. “So what do I owe this pleasure?” he asked as he placed small kisses on my chin.

“Can’t I just visit?” I faked annoyance. He laughed and raised his eyebrow. “Okay, okay, I brought you something.” I held out the plain white envelope.

“What is..?” he stopped speaking when he pulled out Anthony’s birth certificate that now held his name in the father position. I saw tears build in his eyes and I wrapped my arms around him.

“Happy early Father’s Day” I whispered into his ear; even though Father’s Day was like three weeks away. He latched onto me tightly and lifted me off my feet. I giggled and then realized that he was carrying me. “What are you doing?”

Without a word he sat me on his desk and started to attack my lips fiercely. I slid my hands into his hair and gripped on to him. He moaned and that was when I knew we needed to stop before it got carried away.

“Edward” I mumbled into his mouth. He didn’t stop. “Edward” I laughed.

He pulled back breathless “Thank you so much!” he smiled and looked at the certificate again.

“Don’t thank me. It should have been that way all along” I dropped my head. His finger found my chin and lifted my face so he could kiss me.

“Thank you for bringing it down here for me to see” he kissed me again. “I think we should celebrate tonight.” He smiled and I nodded. “Let’s go out to dinner, just me and you?”

“Let me check with Mrs. Jenks and I will let you know” I smiled and kissed him again. “Okay now get back to work mister!” I laughed and he smacked my ass as I headed out the door.

EPOV

Moving in together as a family was fantastic, but nothing felt better than when she appeared with my name on my son's birth certificate. It was the best feeling that I had ever felt.

I had to admit that tonight was not just to celebrate the certificate; I had ulterior motives. Every since Alice and Jasper had told everyone about their pregnancy and then seeing Alice's tiny little bulge I had longed to convince Bella to have another baby. I knew it was soon and that she wouldn't do it, so I kept fighting the urge to talk about it. We had only been back together for less than a year and I knew the Bella preferred to take it slow and not rush, but I felt like a little spontaneity was in order for us. Everything about us in the past and now was so calculated feeling; like we could really timeline when to feel things for each other.

Bella had called about an hour after she left to tell me that Mrs. Jenks would take care of Anthony while we went out tonight. I immediately started running through everything in my head and I pulled open the drawer that held the tiny blue box; a box that I had gotten since we returned after 'that night' at my parents and held onto it until now. It was time.

I picked Bella up from her office at six thirty and we headed to the restaurant at the Seattle Space Needle. The night was going wonderfully. We talked about work, new artists, about Alice and Jasper, and we talked about Anthony.

Once the desserts had been placed on the table I decided that it was time for me to swallow my nerves and just do this. "Bella?"

"Hmm?" she asked as she pulled her fork from her mouth.

"I wanted to ask you something" I looked at her and she obviously saw something that made her afraid.

"What's wrong?" she asked quickly placing her fork down on the plate.

"Nothing is really wrong. Well, I mean, there is one thing that is wrong and I need to correct it" her face went white. "It's not something bad, at least I hope that you don't think that it's bad."

I pulled out the box from my jacket, opened it, and presented it to Bella. "I want you to marry me" her mouth opened and her eyes widened. "Before you argue all the reasons that we shouldn't get married and how soon it is, please just consider how long I've loved you. No one will ever mean more to me than you and Anthony. Please say it, say that you love me enough to marry me and become Isabella Cullen?" I sat waiting for what felt like an eternity for her to answer me.

She swallowed hard and then spoke. "Edward, it is so..." I cut her off.

"I've already thought all of this out. Do you want to be with anyone else?" She shook her head. "Well neither do I and that's all that matters. We only want each other, we only love each other."

Marry me Bella Swan?" I refused to use Fiorello, unless I had to.

"Yes" she said so quick that I thought that I heard her wrong.

"Did you say yes? Did you just agree?" I stood up and quickly pulled her too me as she nodded that she had indeed said yes. "Thank you Bella!" I pressed my lips to hers and kissed her passionately the taste of lemon cake still present in her mouth.

"Thank you" she whispered against my lips. I raise my eyebrow as I pulled back to look at her. "Thank you for still wanting and loving me, after everything" she smiled and kissed me passionately.

We only made it to the car to ravish each other's bodies. Both of us now carried condoms with us because of our random attacks on each other.

I convinced Bella to marry me only two weeks after that on a Friday afternoon. We went to a local court house with a few family members attending a civil marriage. It was small, quiet, and quick. We had both done the big wedding and we wanted something more private.

We had rented out the country club to bring our family and friends together to celebrate the union with dinner, drinks, and music. It was a very nice evening. Anthony went with my parents for the rest of the weekend and I surprised Bella with a small getaway. I rented a cabin in the mountains; about 8 hours north of Seattle. It was a gorgeous cabin that I had planned to keep her naked and in front of the fireplace the whole time. Bella didn't know about the cabin until we got here; it was my surprise for her.

"Oh Edward it's beautiful" she sighed out as we entered and looked around. It really was a cute little cabin. I immediately set out to start the fire.

"I thought you would like it" I smiled to her as I placed the screen in front of the fire that was slowly increasing in intensity. She came over to me quickly and wrapped her arms around me.

"Well Mr. Cullen I think we should get the luggage into the bedroom" she smiled.

"Indeed Mrs. Cullen" I couldn't help but feel giddy when I said that. Bella was my wife; she was Isabella Cullen.

While Bella took a shower I set up wine, cheese, fruit, blankets and pillows around the fireplace. By the time she came downstairs in her pajamas I had everything ready and the smile on her face was all the reward I needed.

We sat drinking wine and snacking on the food while we talked about everything that we could. The past was a main topic of discussion for about an hour, and then we discussed Anthony; how smart he was, his sense of humor, that he had already shown signs of Bella's sarcasm, and that he was definitely musical like me.

“I bet you were beautiful” I said without thinking.

“Huh?” Bella, who was lying next to my with her head on my left arm, tilted her head up to look at me in confusion.

“Uh...when you were pregnant with Anthony” I smiled and looked away. I know how guilty she still felt and I didn’t want her to feel that way tonight.

“Oh” she said quietly and returned her head to its original position. *Shit! I just killed the mood.*

But I was wrong.

BPOV

Seeing the way Edward’s face lit up and at the same time was so saddened at Anthony’s updated birth certificate really ripped my heart apart. He had missed so much with Anthony and it was my entire fault.

When we had gone out to dinner that night our conversation was so easy and light, but I could tell that Edward had something on his mind. I was waiting for him to decide he was ready to talk about it. Once I heard him say that he wanted to ask me something and I looked at his face I was almost distraught. Had he finally wised up to what a bad person I was and decided that we should end this; his face was so nervous and scared that it’s all I could think of.

He proposing was not something that I had been ready for and I was completely shocked. I listened to him and my first reaction was to object and be cautious, but then I did what I never seemed to be able to do before. I let go and let my heart decide; I said yes.

Lying with him in this cabin talking about the past, the present, the future, listening to him talk about Anthony I pictured his face the day at his office over the birth certificate.

“I bet you were beautiful” he seemed to blurt it out.

“Huh?” I wasn’t sure if I had missed something.

“Uh...when you were pregnant with Anthony” he smiled at me and quickly avoided looking at me.

Guilt instantly set in, like it always did. “Oh” was the only response I could give. My mind was spinning and things were flashing behind my eyelids as I closed my eyes and nuzzled up to Edward’s side; Edward seeing Anthony for the first time at Rose’s, him being with Anthony in the hospital, his face as he went through Anthony’s baby and photo books, and the way he looked in his office a few weeks ago. It was then that I realized my feelings complete at each of those moments and it wasn’t just guilt; relief, excitement, joy, and a few weeks ago it was longing; longing to have another child with Edward.

I rolled over and climbed up his body. I bit my lip just because I knew that it drove him crazy.

“Bella...that lip...” he warned. I smiled then bit my lip again as I pressed my lips to his.

I took his bottom lip into my mouth and bit gently on it; his tongue plunged into my mouth and his hands were in my hair. I was gripping his shirt as our kiss deepened and became more animalistic.

Our bodies instantly started to react to each others kiss and touch. I ran my hands down his chest and propped myself up so I could grab the hem of his t-shirt. His mouth moved to my neck and he lightly bit between my neck and shoulder. I instantly went primal from that; I yanked his shirt over his head and growled at the sight of his chest.

Planting wet open mouthed kisses on his chest he held tightly to my hands as I pushed his pajama bottoms to his ankles where he kicked them off. I internally thanked god that he had skipped wearing underwear. I licked him from base to tip and slightly sucked the tip of his dick into my mouth; swirling my tongue. He hissed in appreciation and I continued to work his cock with my mouth and hand until he was solid and rock hard for me. I slowly bobbed my head on him as his hands on my head set the pace for him. I lightly slid my teeth over the flesh of his erection and growled; pulling me up to his chest and rolling us over.

I could see the primal lust in his eyes too. He tore my silk button up pajama top away from my skin and growled when he saw that I had skipped the underclothes as well. His mouth attacked my right breast as his left hand pushed my pajama bottoms down to my knees; his foot hooked the pants and pushed them down so I could kick them off.

Edward placed his magic fingers between my wet lips sliding up and down until I bucked my hips. He moved his two fingers to my swollen clit and began to rub slowly; driving me crazy. When he slid the two fingers down my slit and inside of me I groaned loudly and fisted his hair tightly. As he pumped his fingers into me I felt my body tighten and clench down around him. I screamed his name out loudly and could feel his smile on my breast as I panted; trying to catch my breath.

Quickly he was between my legs and leaning over to something above me. I was kissing his stomach, which was aligned with my face due to his leaning and could feel him shiver when I would lightly bite on his skin.

Finally he returned to me and pressed his lips to mine forcefully. “You are so amazing” he moaned into my mouth.

“Fuck me Edward” I growled into his ear. I felt his body shift and I heard a crumpling sound; instantly realizing that it was a condom. I reached my hand down between us and stopped him as he was about to roll on the latex. His eyes shot up to me as I pulled the condom away and threw it away from us. “Fuck me Edward” I growled again and bit my lip.

His dick plunged into me so quickly that I lost my breath at first. He stopped allowing me to

adjust and to breathe. I pushed forward and he started his slow but powerful thrusts. The smoldering soon built into a flame that would put our fireplace to shame. I began to push my hips up faster and harder against him and he increased his plunging.

“Oh god...Edward...Fuck” I moaned out as I dug one hand into his shoulder and the other fisted tightly into his hair.

“Too perfect....fuck Bella....You feel so fucking good!” he moaned into my neck before licking and sucking on my skin.

We both moaned and grunted a little longer until he pushed my legs up to my chest and sunk deeper into me sending over the edge of ecstasy in his swift deep move. I screamed his name and my pussy clenched around his dick. That was all he needed to let go and call out my name as he released his orgasm into me.

Both of us were out of breath and were tangled together on the floor in front of the fireplace; holding each other and loving each other. I had never felt so happy in all my life; so fulfilled.

#####

Chapter: 30

Chapter 30 – Three and a Half Years

BPOV

One Year

A few months after Edward and I were married Alice and Jasper welcomed Jasmine; a beautiful tiny little girl with jet black hair like Alice. However, she had Jasper’s bright blue eyes. She was a sweet little girl who was spoiled by everyone.

Alice started to design all of Jasmine’s clothes and soon found that she had requests for her baby designs. This got Alice into her newest business; ‘Fashion Pixie Baby Boutique’. She had multiple locations throughout the country; California, New York, Seattle, Dallas, Miami, etc. As Jasmine got older Alice has started designing for toddlers, children, and teens. After three years this led to the development of ‘ Boutiques’ which were aimed for teenagers. She was truly a brand.

Christopher Robert Cullen arrived almost a year after Edward and I were married. He had dark brown hair and green eyes. From the moment that Edward found out I was pregnant I couldn’t keep his hands off of my stomach or out of my pants. The larger my belly became the more he

would attack me.

He insisted on being at every doctor's appointment, watching me shower, drying me off, and he had even bought me maternity clothing that were supposed to fit snugly to my body. I even teased him that he wouldn't want me anymore when my belly was gone. Edward had smirked and responded simply; "Looks like I'll just have to keep you pregnant then." I had smacked him and laughed.

The first time that he had felt Christopher move and kick inside me we ended up calling off from work while. We had stayed in bed all day with his head or hand on my stomach and discussing names and nurseries.

Anthony was excited about the baby, though when he felt the baby kick he cringed up his nose and walked away. From that moment on he didn't want to touch my stomach; we found this amusing.

I don't think that there had ever been a prouder father in the hospital the day that Edward watched me give birth to Christopher. He was a great support through the delivery and the tears that I saw from his eyes when they placed Christopher onto my stomach made my heart fill my chest. Edward held him close to his chest without any fear. He was a constant in our first days home from the hospital. Even though we had plenty of help and support from friends and family, Edward was determined to do it all for me. When I thought that being pregnant was the largest turn on for Edward; I was corrected.

Edward would watch me breastfeed or sleep with Christopher and the moment he could get me alone his hands were all over me. "Do you realize how beautiful it is to watch you with our son?" he had mumbled into my neck as he pressed me against the wall outside of Christopher's room one day. The moment that we were able to have sex again was the most intense night we had ever had. He had made me come at least six times that night and had taken me lovingly, forcefully, from behind, me on top, him on top, against the shower wall, etc.

Two Years

Two years after Edward and I had been married Emmett was injured in a game and could no longer play in the NFL. He was disappointed but was happy to be home with Rose and the kids. Rose was the biggest surprise of us all. Miss Independent was the PTA leading, mini-van driving, soccer mom of the year. I swear she was on every school committee that she could volunteer her help and she ran fundraisers for soccer and ballet.

Rose and Emmett had become foster parents to a set of twins and eventually adopted them. Irina and Carmen were three years old when the adoption was finalized. Rose was super mom; she put me to shame.

Emmett couldn't stay away from football and Rose knew it; so when her school association friends had mentioned that WSU was looking for a football coach she immediately pushed Emmett to look into it. Now Emmett was in his second year of coaching college football.

Anthony was six and going into First Grade and Christopher was a little over one year old when Edward told me what he wanted for our anniversary.

“Bella?”

“Yeah” I said over some papers that I was reading in our home office.

Both of our companies had now negotiated a merger that allowed for the companies to function somewhat separately; however, they were both owned and operated by BEC. BEC was the joint company that Edward and I had created after I bought out most of Aro’s stake in the label.

Aro had been looking to retire, so I offered to buy most of his stock and in return he would keep a percentage. This move made me the primary owner of the company; which in turn became Edward’s with the merger. With the kids I worked part time in the office and part time at home; Edward worked mostly at the office.

“Our anniversary is coming up” I looked up from the contracts and smirked.

“Yes it is. Did you just remember that?” I giggled as I put the contracts back into a folder.

“No” he smirked at me. “I was just thinking about what we should do that’s all.”

“I think that staying home with the kids and having a movie marathon would be ideal” I smiled brightly. I loved when we all were together; no soccer, no preschool, no work; just us.

“Hmmm...that sounds good” He smiled widely. “However, do you think that I will be able to get you alone at some point Mrs. Cullen?” he raised an eyebrow at me.

I laughed. “You have me alone with you now Mr. Cullen.”

Edward stood and walked around the desk pulling me up from my chair. His lips met mine and his tongue separated my lips. I moaned into his mouth and gripped his biceps. I felt the desk against the back of my thighs and his hands as they lifted me onto the desk. He pushed my skirt up mid thigh and stood between my knees as he pulled back slightly.

“So” I panted out “what is it that you need me alone for?” I said as seductively as I could before licking and biting my lip.

He crushed his mouth to mine and slid his hands over my ass gripping firmly. Then he pulled back to answer me “Hmmm...I’m just thinking about how nice a little girl would be.”

Edward attacked my neck; licking and sucking at my flesh. “A little girl?” I questioned breathlessly.

“Mm Hmm” he said into my neck; not looking up.

“Edward I...” he cut me off.

“I want to see your belly grow with our child again” he looked into my eyes. “I want to make another beautiful child. I want to see you carry, give birth, and breastfeed my baby again.”

“I just...”

“Bella, I love you” he crushed his lips to mine and slid his fingers to the inside of my thighs.

The light touch of his fingertips across my cotton covered core made me shiver and groan.

“Mmm..you’re getting hotter” he whispered into my ear. “I want to make you so wet and so hot that I make you scream out my name so many times that the neighbors come to check on us.” I felt my underwear instantly dampen as the words rolled off his tongue; the tongue that was flicking at my earlobe.

Edward brought me over the edge of ecstasy three times as he fucked me on the office desk; screaming out for him each time. As he crashed over the edge he groaned out my name into my chest.

Three Years

Lily Alexandra Cullen was born with brown hair that held bronze and red highlights as it grew. Her eyes were as green as her fathers and from the moment she was born Edward was hooked. He loved all of our children, but this little girl was his ‘baby girl’, his ‘princess’. ‘Princess Lily’ was brought home to the pinkest and most fairytale like room that any little girl could want. Edward had done it all. She was doted on constantly by her big brothers; who were already very protective over her. If anyone picked her up and held her they were standing ‘guard’ near them and watching intently. If she cried then Anthony or Chris would immediately put their arms up to hold her or to instruct them to take her back to Momma or Daddy. She had those two little boys wrapped around her tiny pink finger.

Three and a Half Years

Anthony was now seven, Christopher was two and Lily was almost one. They were all staying with Grandpa Charlie and Grandma Sue tonight.

I had my car filled with blankets, coolers, and food. As I drove through Forks I couldn’t help but think of all the things that had happened; some good, some bad, and some great! I was pulled out of my reminiscing by the sound of my cell phone ringing.

“Hello?”

“Bella, did you get everything?” Alice asked in a rushed tone.

“Yes. Where are you and why do you sound...” she cut me off.

“I just dropped Jasmine off at mom and dad’s and I am rushing to get everything set up” I shook my head and continued to listen to her rant. “I have to get it just right, you know? It’s been forever.” She giggled.

“Yes it has and Alice?”

“Yeah?”

“This was a brilliant idea. Thanks!”

“Of course it’s brilliant...I thought of it!” she laughed and hung up.

It was a little less than a month ago when Alice had called for an ‘EGL’ – emergency girl’s lunch. I was immediately worried that something was wrong; thankfully I was the one that was wrong.

“Okay ladies I am calling this lunch with a purpose” Alice sat up straight at the table and pounded her fist on the table like she was a judge. Rose and I laughed. Alice winked at us. “Okay...as I was going to say; we all have been way too wrapped up in our own lives and I think that it is time for a girl’s night.”

Rose and I looked weary at her as she said ‘girls night’. There were so many things that Alice could be thinking of doing. However, what she had planned was beyond perfect.

About thirty minutes after I had hung up with Alice I pulled into the La Push Beach parking lot. Alice was busily moving around setting up torches and pushing wood into the fire pit.

I was pulling out the blankets and coolers when Rose pulled up smiling widely; Leah in her passenger seat. They climbed out and we all hugged before we started moving our stuff down to the beach.

After we ate hotdogs and chips we started making smores. We laughed as we talked about the many parties that we had come to on the beach, when Leah had to tell Charlie and Sue that she was pregnant, the weirdness of Edward and me now being together with three kids, Rose being the super PTA mom, and about past boyfriends.

Alice got the music going and our next conversation turned into a sex conversation; courtesy of Rose, of course.

“Emmett likes for me to take charge and be dominating” she laughed as she took another drink out of her vodka bottle.

“I don’t know if I want to hear anymore” I coughed out as I took a drink and laughed.

“Oh no...I need to know now, so finish” Alice giggled.

“He” she started to laugh harder “likes to be spanked.” We all busted into hysterics.

“Oh no...wait...Sam likes to pretend that I am the maid and while his ‘wife’ is away...” our laughter cut her off as she doubled over. We found humor in the stories, but the alcohol was a definite factor. “no...no..listen” she was trying to catch her breath and speak at the same time “He bought me an outfit to wear and I have to call him Mr. Uley!!” She spit out before we laughed again.

“Oh God! I will never be able to look at Sam again” I was almost in tears. Leah pushed me.

“Okay come on Al, we all know that behind that calm façade of Jasper’s he is a freak” I teased.

Alice started to laugh uncontrollably. “What?” I asked with wide eyes. “Am I right?!?! I am!!! Aren’t I?!?!?”

She took in a huge breath and tried to calm down. “You know that Jasper like’s history...” we all nodded “well, he has me dress up in this southern bell costume...” our giggles erupted already “and he likes to play the dominating southern civil war soldier...” She couldn’t finish because our faces had her in a fit of laughter. Then she spit out one last thing. “He even uses a long southern drawl and he has me use it too!!!”

“That’s it...I’m going to piss my pants!” I held my sides in laughter. We sounded like Hyenas.

“Who would have guessed that they were all such freaks and that you three all participate in that sort of thing” I teased them.

“Oh not so fast Ms. Bella!” Alice pointed her finger at me. “He may be my brother, but it is time to spill and spill it now! What does my freaking brother like?!?!?”

“Look compared to you guys he’s not such a freak” I laughed.

“We will be the judge” Rose ordered.

“Fine. He likes when I bite my lip...it does him in every time, oh and when I pull on his hair” I shrugged.

“BULLSHIT!” Alice said. “There’s more than that, so you better get talking!”

I rolled my eyes. “What do you want me to tell you about the time that he had me wear a cheerleader costume, no underwear, and he fucked me in the backseat of his Volvo?!”

“YES!!!” They screamed at once and I laughed.

“I knew my brother had it in him!!!” Alice giggled. “Did that really happen?”

“Maybe” I stuck my tongue out at them and laughed hysterically.

“It did!” Alice laughed. “Is that how we got Lily?!?” she giggled.

“No, no...Lilly was on top of the desk in our home office” I winked and tilted my bottle back to finish it off.

“Holy Shit! Edward is a man of all surfaces!” Rose cried out before giggling.

“Why yes he is...and I completely recommend the tree house” I chuckled and their laughter grew more.

“Hmmm...” Rose pulled out her phone. “I might text that to Emmett.” She smiled slyly. We all huddled behind her as she typed out her message.

R: Do you miss me you bad boy?

We could barely stand when we read what she sent. Her phone pinged shortly.

E: You know it. Are you going to punish me tonight?

I swear I almost pissed myself at that moment. Rose shushed us, though I’m not sure why since it was a text message; alcohol.

R: Don’t know if we can pull that off tonight, but I have heard great things about the tree house.

We all sat around in anticipation of his response.

E: Shit baby, can you meet me now! Lil’Bear wants to play.

“LIL’BEAR!” I shouted and fell back onto the sand as I laughed so hard that my chest, sides, and stomach were sore.

“I know right!!” Rose laughed. “He named it himself too!!” I think I did piss my pants a little at that point.

The last thing I remembered was laughing about Lil’Bear.

When I felt my body being stirred around I started to wake up, but then I felt the strong arms under me and I rolled closer to the warm hard chest. I took a breath and smelled him; my Edward, my husband, my lover. “Mmm...Edward...” I mumbled.

“Shh...sleep love. I’ve got you.” He spoke in just a whisper. I curled up to him and fell back to sleep.

I stretched out and felt the softness underneath me. Opening my eyes I saw a familiar room;

Edward's. I shifted and looked straight into the face of the love of my life.

He was sleeping so soundly and he had the same look that Anthony had when he slept. I didn't want to wake him, but I couldn't stop from taking my hand and touching him. As I went to pull my hand away he scared me by grabbing my hand. He pressed my hand back to his face.

"Don't stop" he mumbled and pulled my body closer. It was then that I realized he was touching bare skin.

I pulled up the covers and saw that I was in my bra and underwear. "What happened to my clothes?" I asked in a hushed tone.

His eyes opened and he smiled crookedly. "You don't remember?" he gave me a look of shock. "I'm hurt Bella!" I rolled my eyes and he laughed. "Once I got you in the house you insisted that I put you down because, and I quote, 'I can walk for myself Edward!'" he imitated me with a drunken slur. I smacked his chest lightly and laughed.

"And the clothes?" I raised my eyebrow.

"Well, once you stumbled over the last step you kicked off your shoes and slowly started to peel your clothes off as we walked." He smiled. "I picked up your clothes, they are over there" he motioned to a chair in the corner of his room.

"Thank you" I said sweetly and kissed him softly.

"No, thank you. So do I need to buy blueberry vodka for you every night so I can watch you strip?" He wiggled his eyebrows. I shook my head.

"Shut up!" I giggled. "You don't have to give me alcohol to strip for you" I winked and rolled away from him.

"Oh you are not going anywhere Mrs. Cullen" he growled into my ear as he slid his tongue over the back of my neck and ran his hand down my side. "God you always taste so wonderful Bella...so fucking perfect" his hand slid over my leg and then ran lightly between my thighs. I moaned. His fingers ghosted over my lace panties and I wiggled a little at the touch; pressing his hard cock against my ass.

"Mmm...Edward..." I moaned quietly.

"Yes love...what do you want?" he teased.

"I want you to fuck me" I growled back.

"You can do better than that for me...can't you?" He lightly bit my neck.

I growled and rolled over; quickly straddling his hips and attacking his mouth. I could hear the

low rumble in his chest from lust. I stripped my bra off and slipped my panties off; reclaiming my position on him.

Grinding my center onto his hardness got me the friction I wanted and also got the knot building in my stomach. His hands firmly gripped my breasts and rolled my nipples. One hand slipped over my stomach and to my clit where he massaged in a circling motion. It was all it took, I slipped over the edge without him even entering me; he was a sex magician I swear.

He flipped us over so that he was between my legs. Disposing of his boxers he pressed his bare cock to my wet lips and slid his length up and down between them; I felt the fire start to stir again. Edward made me beg for him to fuck me before he drove into me in one swift hard motion and repeated the action over and over slowly, just bringing me to the edge and keeping me there. When I realized that I couldn't take any more I pushed my hips forward to meet his thrust and he went wild with lust and need; fucking me hard enough that he had to grab my hips to keep me from sliding off the bed. In the end we collapsed onto the bed exhausted.

"I love you Bella Cullen" he whispered.

"I love you Edward Cullen" I whispered and kissed his forehead.

He leaned closer to my ear "We didn't use a condom" he said this with a slight smirk in his voice.

I curled up closely to his chest kissing it and simply said "I've always liked the name 'Edward'."

A/N: Okay so I know that some people will not like this ending, but I really felt like I couldn't put them in any more situations that would cause drama and so forth. So, I wanted to have a fun ending for everyone.

The girl's night being one of my favorites.

Well, I hope that everyone enjoyed the story and that you are too disappointed with the end. I feel pretty good about it.

I still have 'Opener vs. Headliner' story that I am working on & 'Modern Arrangement' has just started. I also have another story that I have an idea for; though it is way to early in my creative process for me to really even say anything about it.